

A SPANISH GRAMMAR,  
first collected and published by *Richard Percivale*  
*Gent.* Now augmented and increased with the decli-  
ning of all the Irregular and hard verbes in that toong, with  
diuers other especiall Rules and necessarie Notes for all  
*such as shall be desirous to attaine the per-*  
*fection of the Spanissh*  
*tongue.*

Done by IOHN MINSHEU  
Professour of Languages in London.

*Hereunto for the yoong beginners learning and ease, are*  
annexed Speeches, Phrases, and Prouerbes, expounded out of  
diuers Authors, setting downe the line and the leafe where in  
*the same booke they shall finde them, whereby they*  
may not onely vnderstand them, but by  
them vnderstand others, and  
the rest as they shall  
meete with  
them.

*Virescit vulnere Virtus.*



Imprinted at London, by  
*Edm. Bollifant.*

1599

TO THE RIGHT WORSHIP-  
FVLL GENTLEMEN STVDENTS OF  
Grayes Inne health and happines, and to the  
*affected to languages there, daily encrease*  
with perfect accomplishment of the  
most commendable qualities.



Vcius a famous Roman meeting on a time with the  
Emperor Marcus, asked him whither he went: who  
answered, I am going to Sextus, vt discam quod  
nondum scio, that I may learne that which I doe not  
yet know. Diogenes the philosopher went to Athens  
to Antisthenes to learne of him somewhat that he  
was ignorant of; but Antisthenes not willing to im-  
part at that time any of his doctrine, repulsed him:  
the other left not off his purpose, but more and more  
importuned him in such sort that Antisthenes taking  
up a staffe to drine him away, Diogenes stretched out his necke, willing him to  
strike on hardly, for he should not finde a staffe so hard, that could drine him from him  
so long as he might learne any matter by him woorthie the hearing. I speake this  
Gentlemen, meaning none of you to be bound by their example, seeing one was an  
Emperor and might doe what he list, and the other a Cinick philosopher that would  
doe that he ought: therefore if a man haue any learning or qualittie, let him bring it  
to you, and if it be too tedious vnto you, or hinder your sport, rather then be troubled  
with him, kob him or flout and scoffe him away. Be not imitators of Demosthenes  
which spent more oyle in the lampe in studying to enrich his minde, then wine to  
comfort his bodie; but rather waste your wine and spare your canales: neither be so  
foolish as Cleanthes the philosopher, that drew water in the night that he might  
follow his studie in the day; rather take your ease in the night and your pleasure in  
the day, because Mutantur tempora & nos mutamur in illis. Yet Gentlemen, if you  
doe but set before your eies these famous men, which haue beene and are of the house  
you now remaine in, (the names of some few I can now recite) as Sir Nicholas Ba-  
con Lord Keeper, Lord Burleigh Lord Treasurer, Sir Walter Mildmay and Sir  
Francis Walsingham, learned Fitzherbert Lord chiefe Iustice of the common

pleas which abridged the law, and Sir William Stanford, which wrote the pleas of the crowne, Sergeant Yeluerton, Sergeant Daniell, Sergeant Spurling, Master Brograue, Master Stanhop, Master Hesquit, Master Anthonie and Master Francis Bacon, with diuers others might well mooue you to consider that Qui vult plus qu'vn autre valoir, doibt plus qu'vn autre scavoir: He that will be esteemed aboue another man, must haue more knowledge then another man: And Meglio esser mendicante che ignorante, Better to bee a begger then barren of good letters. But these letters are painefully purchased, why Petit ardua virtus; Difficilia virtutis via; Difficilia quæ pulchra: Therefore Pythagoras counselled his familiar friendes that they should choose out the best kinde of life, although the most difficult: and Salust saith, deckings pertaine to women, and trauels belong to men: and Seneca affirmeth, that base is that honor which is gotten with idlenes, which the Roman pollicie when it flourished confirmed by an auncient lawe duly kept, that euery father that had children of the age of renne yeeres should become suretie for them, that they shoulde not lue idle, or commit any excessse, which was so neerely looked vnto, that they publikely chastised Cato the Censors some for a saucines committed, and banished a brother of good old Cina for lining idlie among them. None durst presume to go into the streetes but hee carried some token in his hande what kinde of life or studie hee followed, which if in these times it were in force, how many streete walkers would retire themselues to some vertuous studies. But methinke I heare some saie, Ars longa & vita brevis, I answered them with the Thebane Philosopher, which in the 75. Olympiade, came to the solempne sports kept about the citie Olympia in honor of Iupiter, who had made all the apparell he ware with his owne hands: his shooes he had sowed, his shirt he had woven, &c. being demanded where he had learned so manie mens arts, answered, In the beginning there was but one arte as all, & that the sloth of men had caused that one to be diuided into many, and how euerie particular man with diligence and labour might obtaine to the knowledge of that that all men in generall had knowledge of. To this purpose Pythagoras said, He that knoweth not what he ought to know, is a brute beast among men: He that knoweth no more then he hath need of, is a man among brute beasts: He that knoweth al that may be knowen, is a God among men. So many examples present themselues that rather time would faile then matter herein, & for that my case standeth now rather to demand remedie and not giue counsell, or to giue thanks for good turnes receiued, and not prescribe precepts, I thinke good briefly and plainely to shew vnto you how hauing founde my selfe beholding to some of you, whom I had read vnto in the toongs, I thought nothing could better agree with my profession as to shewe my gratefull minde towards you, then by labouring for your ease, in these instructions of the Spanissh toong: which if they be thankfully receiued, I shall thinke my labour well imploied. Yet before I could make an ende of this and the Dictionarie, I did as Robertus Stephanus saith of himselfe in gathering together his Dictionaries called Thesaurus linguæ Græcæ & Latinæ; I haue made Thesaurum, that is, a Treasure for others, but thereby haue made my selfe a bagger, whereof some of the right vertuous and woorthie gentlemen of that your house, (to whom I am most beholding, and therefore stande most in affection bounde) vnderstanding,

Pythagoras.

derstanding, wished me to goe forwarde in so good a woork, and not to giue ou'r for some wants: which then of themselues they supplied, whose good kindnes if I forget, I wish the law of Draco, (which was to punish with death, if there were any found so vnthankfull as not to requite a good turne, or at least to forbear to acknowledge his benefactors for the same) might be inflicted on me: for there can be no greater iniurie offered to a free minde, then to bee reputed ingratefull: although in these daies fower as great euils left unpunished as those that are punished, Vntemperatenes, Vnshamefastnes, Vnfaithfulnes, and Vnthankfulnes. But to begin with my benefactors in this worke in order as they began with mee in Grayes Inne, first Master William Willoughby, a gentleman as vertuouslie minded and of as good carriage as the rest: next Master Henrie Bing, whose excellent learning, placed together with such gentlemanlike conditions, makes him beloued among the Elders, and honored among the yoonger sort: after him Master Frances Barneham, and Master Iames Hewes, endued with exceeding good wits, and no lesse good natures: I may not forget the good woorths of Master Robert Hill, and Master Cheeke, gentlemen well studied in the most commendable kindes of learning: Master Dauison of excellent learning, wit and vertues: Master Helmes and Master Gill both for their good parts better knowne then I can heere set downe: Master Thomas Mason, and Master Iohn Roberts, adorned with ornaments of languages, to their other learning and vertues: Master Archer as he is well read in language, so is he a good fauourer of learning. The rest of the well accomplished yoong gentlemen whom I know not, I saie of them as my minde is towards them best: Gentlemen, if for these praises you shall any plaie on another, I pray you cast all on mee, for I protest none of them euen knewe that I ment to write vnto them, much lesse put any of their names in print. Thus wishing to you as much as Cicero writing to his friend Atticus, would limite to be wished to his dearest friends, viz. To enjoy health, to possesse honor, and neuer to suffer want,  
I rest:

At your command

JOHN. MINSHEU.

## To the Reader.

**I**F it be vanitie and vexation of minde, for a man to toile in this life to gather riches together, when he knowes not whether he be wise or foolish that shall enioy it: we may thinke the sweate of our spirits and the toile of our bodies, to be altogether vaine, which write or print, when we cannot tell whether they will prooue sober or franticke, to whom we leaue the possession of our trauels. But the Spaniard saith, *Quien de miedo se murió de cagaxones le hizo en la sepultura*; and because as the Italian saying is, *A molti puzza l'ambro*, Amber is accounted stinking by many: and *Dal asino non ne hai che calzi e perti*: I am resolu'd for this once to put on merchants eares, to heare with patience euerie mans speech and dispraisings of his wares, because *Quot homines, tot sententiae*. So many men, so many mindes. Therefore he that should leaue off any good worke for any mans ill speech, may well be likened to that poore, feely fellow, which on a time went with one of his sonnes with his Ass before him to the wood, to fetch him a load thereof for his wife and children, and meeting trauellers by the way; some misliking with him that he should goe on foote, and let his Ass goe leere; others, that he roade himselfe, and suffered his childe to goe a foote; others, that he loaded the poore Ass with two persons, being scarce able to carrie himselfe; others, when he left his sonne alone riding and himselfe go on foote; in such sort that the countrey fellow could not tel what to do, seeing do what he could, still he found reprehenders: whereupon he would goe no further forward, but returned sad home to his house without wood, where he remained for feare of fault finders, till he and his household were neere starued with colde, till at last finding his owne simplicitie, he returned to the wood, and to as many as he met by the way, he said; *Hee that passeth for other mens speeches and reproofes, endureth colde and a thousand greefes*; and he that will throw a stone at euerie dog, shall haue a wearie arme: but I hope, *Qui bien ferá, bien aurá*, And for all the dogs barking, the moone will stand where it did. And I say to the malicious, *Metsta main sovent en ton sein, et tu ne me diras de ton prochain*. And let them remember, that *Chi fa quello che non deve, gli auvien quel che non crede*, According to a Historie I haue read of an Emperour, who had his brothers sonne for his cupbearer: The Emperours steward and vnckle, for enuie perswaded the cupbearer that his breath did stinke, and wished therefore to turne his face from the Emperour when he deliuered the cup till remedie were found: forthwith he told the Emperour, that his cupbearer had defamed him to all his court, by saying his breath did stinke; and to know it for a certaintie, he likewise told him how he should see the cupbearer turne away his face from him when he came neere him; whereupon the Emperour conceiued such wrath against him, (as the saying is, the anger of a Prince the messenger of death) that

## To the Reader.

that he sent expresse commaund to his burners of bricke, that they should burne that man that came vnto them first the next morrow; and likewise commaunded his cupbearer to be there so earely that none might be before him: on the morrow morning verie earely the cupbearer going, and passing by a church in the way went in and fell into such a sound sleepe, that it was the after noone before he could awake. The steward in the meane time to see the euent of the cupbearer, went and was burned himselfe aliue. The cupbearer at his returne signified to the Emperour what had happened, and also, was desirous to knowe of the Emperour why he should send him thither, &c. If neither Histories nor reason perswade them, they must needs be answered with silence, and so gentle Reader I rest silent from troubling thee or them herewith any longer, more grieued at my mishap and disabilitie, then wanting good will or liking to doe thee seruice.

*Hæc raptim.*

*Vale.*

*John Minshen.*



In opus M. Minshewi edendum,  
Iohannis Keperi generosi  
ΕΞΑΡΧΟΥ.

Qui cupis auriferi contingere flumen fberī  
Vocibus & veris noscere gentis opes,  
Vel mores, vel quas exercet Iberia merces,  
Hesperiam & totam noscere quisquis aues:  
Minshæum legito, lectum (mibi crede) probabis,  
Ingenium, genium, munera, verba, fidem:  
Qui totidem subiit noctesque diesque labores,  
Et flores veluti sedula carpsit apes;  
Qui tibi qui patriæ, sese sumptumque dicauit,  
Edidit, & tantæ sedulitatis opus,  
Aut lauda, aut saltem noli mordere, latrando  
Zoile, tabificus, ne videre, canis.

Soneto de un capitan Español  
del Autor.

De un diamantino muro circuydo  
Con puertas de metal ynpenetrable;  
Y por guarda un dragón fiero espantable,  
Era el huérto de Atlante defendido:  
Mas siendo del fuerte Ercules vencido,  
Fue abierta la puerta yncontrastable,  
Y las pomas de precio ynestimable  
Gozáron luego quantos han querido,  
Vos Minchen soys el Ercules famoso,  
Que a pesar de la ynvidia (dragon fiero)  
Abristes puerta al huerto ameno umbróso,  
De la yspanica lengua, que primero  
Cerrada estubo al yngles curioso,  
Do gozara pomas de oro verdadero.

The Proeme.



Spanish is a speech, whereof in times past (in Spaine) there hath beene sower kinds used: The first and ancientest is the Biskaine, which was the speech of the province of Biskay and Nauarre: it hath his originall from the Caldean toong, as the learned in them both affirme, to whome it plainly appeereth that this is of greatest antiquitie.

The next is that which was spoken in the kingdom of Granado, and in parte in the kingdomes of Andalusia, Valencia, and Aragon, and was the Arabique.

whose originall is the Hebrew almost among them quite worne out, yet to this date they keepe the pronounciation of some of their letters still, as G, J, X, Z.

The thirde is the Catalan, which is a kinde of French, and had his beginning from the province of Gascoigne, from the ancient citie Lимоjes: they speake this in the kingdoms of Cataluna, Mallorca, Menorca, Iuica and Cerdena. This Catalan toong was called Pronenscal: and the Italians confesse that the Pronenscals were the first inuentors of their rimes and verses, which are so much prized in Italie where Petrarque, Boccace, and Dante, giue some testimonie in retaining their wordes in manie places.

The fourth is that which is now at this day commonly used and spoken thorowe all Spaine, and is called Lengua vulgar, the mother toong, otherwise Lengua Castellana, or Española, the Castilian or Spanish toong, principally used in Aragon, Andalusia, Murcia, Castilla, Nuéua, and Vexa, León: also in Portugall, although the Portugall toong haue such difference in certaine wordes and pronounciations, that it may well be called a language by it selfe, enen as the English and Scottish, yet in truth, it is not so seuered, but that they sprange from one fountaine, and haue one descendance.

This Lengua vulgar or Spanish toong draweth his originall from the Latine or Romaine, and because the Romaine conquerours were most politicke in providing for the continuance of their estates & language to their posteritie, by planting where they woone, Colonies and garrisons; as also not permitting any stranger to the priuiledge of their lawes or freedome of their townes, to buie, sell, or traffique, but in the Romaine or Latine toong, as in Spaine they haue done: Therefore the Spanish retaineth still to this daie so much of the Latine toong. And by reason of the Incurfion and ouerrunning of so many strange nations, as the Africans inhabiting about Carthage, called Carthaginians, Gothes, Huns, and Vandals, which ceased not till they had ouerrunne the most part of Europe, yet so settled themselves in Andalusia in Spaine, that they called it by their owne name Vandalusia or Vandalia of Vandalles, as also Africans inhabiting Mauritania called Moores, whose first comming in, proceeded from the licentious li-

Power sorts of Spanish,  
1. Biskay toong most ancient.  
This toong drawen from the Caldean.

2. Arabique toong in olde time used in Granado, Andalusia, Valencia, and Aragon, and yet retaineth it in the pronounciation of these letters, S, X, Z, Z.

3. Catalan toong or Pronenscal, a kinde of French, had originall from Gascoigne, and was used in Cataluna, Mallorca, Menorca, Iuica, Cerdena.

4. The Spanish now used, Difference betwene the Spanish and Portugall toong.

\* A Colonie is a place uninhabited, whither people are sent to dwell: or people sent to inhabit such place: or a citie, the people whereof once came from another citie or countrey.

Andalusia, whereof first so named.

# The Proeme.

Howe the  
Moore first en-  
tered and con-  
quered Spaine.  
Chro. of Spaine.

uing and unbridled lust of Don Rodrigo then king, in dishonouring and de-  
flouring a ladie called Cava the daughter of earle Iulian, one of his nobles.

By meanes heereof, this language remaineth so altered and changed from his  
owne first propertie and nature, admitting wordes, accents, and pronunciations of  
other strange nations, as it is become a language of it selfe compounded of the La-  
tine and aboue named toongs: but yet so, that it hath much more of the Latine then  
of all the other, whereby it may be called the Latine toong altered or corrupted.

For Spanish wordes comming from the Latine, marke the table heere following  
and their like.

Spanish wordes drawn from the Moorish toong begin much with Al, as Al-  
cúza, a vessell for oyle: Alfidél, or Alfíler, a pin: Almúd, a measure, a pecke: Al-  
guarifino, Arithmetike: Almoháda, a pillow, &c. or in ç, as çaherir, to upbraid,  
çahórda, a hogstie: or founde on r, or x, Almaráxa, an ewer of glasse: Xabón  
soape: Almoradúx, marjoram: Arredrár, to drine away: Arrélde, fower pounde  
waight, &c. also in z, as Zagál, a shepherd. And at this day the Moores in spea-  
king Spanish for júro a Dios, I sweare by God, they saie jureux a Deux: for Hom-  
bre, they say Homber, for Vuestra mercéd, your worship or mastership, they saie  
Voxár mérxe.

## Generall

## Generall Observations from the Latine for the framing of the SPANISH.

Substantives of the Latines in a, as		In Spanish thus,
Charitas,		Caridad.
Majestas,		Magestad.
Cruelitas,		Crueldad.
Civitas,		Ciudad.
Fidelitas,		Fedelidad.
Securitas,		Seguridad.
Obscuritas,		Escuridad.
Conformitas,		Conformidad.
Calamitas,		Calamidad.
Voluntas, &c.		Voluntad.

The most part of words in Latine beginning with Pl, changed in Ll, as		In Spanish,
Plenus,		Lléno.
Planus,		Lláno.
Pluvia,		Llúvia.
Plaga,		Llága.
Plorare,		Llorár.

In like sort F, turned into H, as		Spanish,
Facere,		Hazér.
Faba,		Háva.
Fax,		Héz.
Falco,		Halcón.
Farina,		Harína.
Fector,		Hedór.
Formosus,		Hermóso,
Ferrum,		Hierro,
Fervor,		Hervor.

The Latine ending in io, made Spanish by put- ting n to it, as		Spanish,
Educatio,		Educación.
Religio,		Religión.
Electio,		Elección.

The Latine ending in um, by changing um into o, as		Spanish,
Ornamentum,		Ornamento.
Experimentum,		Experimento.
Exemplum,		Exémplo.

The Latine ending in lis, by taking away is, as		Spanish,
Materialis,		Material.
Finalis,		Final.
Subtilis,		Sutíl.
Debilis, &c.		Débil.

The Latine ending in the Infinitive mode in e, by taking away e by Apocope, as		Spanish,
Castigare,		Castigár.
Amare,		Amár.
Tenere,		Tenér.
Perdere,		Perdér.
Sentire,		Sentir.
Salire,		Salir.

By adding to the end of a word by *Paragoge*, as *Apostema*, *Appetere*, *Ana*. } Spanish, } *Apostemación*, *Apetecer*, *Anade*.

By adding to the middle of a word by *Epenthesis*, as *Certum*, *Celum*, *Membrum*, *Messu*. } Spanish, } *Cierto*, *Cielo*, *Miembro*, *Miessé*.

By adding to the beginning of a word by *Prothesis*, as *Plumescere*, *Capistrare*, *Scala*, *Scandalum*. } Spanish, } *Emplumecér*, *Encabistrár*, *Escala*, *Escándalo*.

By changing a letter by *Metathesis*, in the middle of a word, of the second person plurall of the Imperative mode, as D and L changing places, as for Castigadle, they write Castigalde, for Dezidle, they say and write Dezilde.

The Spanish sheweth his original from the Latine, although by corruption many words have changed letters, as in these following & their like, as

a	e	Lac, milke, Lèche. <i>Casus</i> , cheese, <i>Quéso</i> .
b	u	<i>Barba</i> , a beard, <i>Bárva</i> . <i>Bibo</i> , I drinke, <i>Bévo</i> .
c	g	<i>Amicus</i> , a friend, <i>amigo</i> . <i>Acuru</i> , sharp, <i>agudo</i> .
e	i	<i>Directus</i> , directed, <i>derigido</i> . <i>lectus</i> , read, <i>leydo</i> .
f	h	<i>Ferru</i> , iron, <i>hierro</i> . <i>facere</i> , to make or do, <i>hazér</i> .
g	y	<i>Regnum</i> , a kingdome, <i>Reyno</i> .

I procede no further herein, but leave every Latinist to consider of them as he shall mete with them by reading, whereby he shall manifestly perceive by the multitude of words in this tongue derived from the Latine, how easie it is for euerie meane scholler speedily to obtaine the knowledge of the same, and with these rules and precepts, which here I shall set downe, I doubt not but that every one (desirous thereof) may with facilitie and short time speake it and write it more than meanly: the which the better to performe, I take it the best order (according to the saying, *Qui bene diuidit bene docet*, He that diuideth the matter, he handleth well, teacheth well) to diuide this present Grammar into *Orthographie*, *Prosodie*, *Etymologie*, and *Syntaxis*, of which though I shall not deale with all of all that may be said, yet at least that shall bee necessaries to be saide for the instruction of the learner in this tongue.

No difficultie in the Spanish tongue or other vulgar tongues coming from the Latine.

OF

# OF ORTHOGRAPHIE

## Of Grammar and hir parts.

Grammar is an Arte teaching the right rules of true speaking and writing, and it is derived from the Greeke word *gramma*, which is *littera*, as much as to say *scientia litteraria*, a Grammar knowledge of letters.

### Deuision of Grammar.

Grammar according to Quintilian, is two fold: *Historicall*, and *Methodicall*. *Historicall*, gotten by imitation of Authors. *Methodicall*, is taught by precepts, which onely we here handle.

### Subdiuision of Grammar.

Grammar methodicall is deuised into fower parts, *Orthographie*, *Prosodie*, *Etymologie*, & *Syntaxis*.  
*Orthographie*, conseruant in letters.  
*Prosodie*, in syllables.  
*Etymologie*, in words.  
*Syntaxis*, in sentences.

Deuision of Grammar.

Propertie of the fower parts of Grammar.

*Orthographie*, of the Greeke word *orthos* right, *grapho* writing.

*Prosodie*, of *pros*, i. ad, & *odia*, cantus, that is *Accentus*.

*Etymologia*, of *etymos*, true, *logos* speech.

*Syntaxis*, of *syn*, i. con, & *taxis*, i. ordinatio, *glossa*, coordinatio.

*Orthographie* is a right rule of true writing, as before of *orthos* right, *grapho* writing, whereby euerie word is to be set downe with his true letters, as *Cierto*, certaine, not *Sierro*. Hereto belongeth *Orthopeia*, which is a right rule of true speaking, of *orthos* right, & *peia* end: word, that in speaking men pronounce not more grosse or smal, then the nature of language will allow, or otherwise then the accustomed manner of pronunciation usually permitted therein, as *Vino*, swine, not to pronounce it as Englishmen doe, *Veino*, but smaller as they pronounce the double ee, *Veeno*, *Dios*, God, not *Deios*, but *Dhecos*. But of this hereafter in the letters more at large. And because *Orthographie* (the former part of our Grammar) chiefly consisteth in the true writing of euerie word with his right letters: It must of necessitie follow, that whosoever speaketh, or heareth a tongue spoken in his proper *Idioma*, and would write downe the same so spoken, that he know the power and propriety of each letter in that tongue (because of letters are framed syllables, and of syllables are made words, and of words the whole speech, and language, the which neglected, must needs bring a confusion to the learner, and little or no fruit to the Teachers labour. Therefore to our purpose.

There are in the Spanish tongue 27. letters, whereof 24. are single, and three double.

The single, A. b. c. d. e. f. g. h. i. j. k. l. m. n. o. p. q. r. s. t. v. x. y. z.

The double are these, ch. ll. ñ.

Letters, Double letters.

If any aske the question, why the Spanish, being descended from the Latine, hath in it more letters then the Latine: I answer, that although it be now (for the most part of words therein) corrupted & broken Latin, yet it had at the first (as in the Poeme before going) his original from the *Caldean*, *Arabique*, and *Moore* tongue, of which they receiue some letters.

But now to our letters as they are in order in the Alphabet of grosse row, without beginning with the vowels, and then skipping from one consonant to another, distracting the memory of the young beginner in a tongue, which would much better reaine the precepts giuen thereon, so they might not be driven to a new order of reckoning their letters, differing from that in their childhood they learned, and now can hardly be drawn from.

A Is founded plainly, with opening the mouth as in the Latin, French, and Italian, as in English man, can: so in Spanish, *Manada*, a flocke, *Enalada*, a salade of herbs.  
 B Is as the Latin, and is called *littera labialis*, one of the labial or lip letters, because it cannot be pronounced without ioyning the lips together. It is pronounced as in English, baker, basket: so in Spanish, *Bacia*, a bowle, *Birro*, clay, but in the middle of a word, except the word come of the Latin. The Spaniards usually confoundeth it with Y consonant, and

Band V conso-  
nant, written  
and pronounced  
one for another.

Nota.

Be cast away.

C cast away.

ç pronounced as  
the Italian z,  
ç pronounced  
as English  
Ch.

D pronounced  
as Dh.

Ga.  
Go, Gu.  
Gua.

Gue, Gui, like  
Ghe, Ghi.

Ge, Gi, as je,  
ji, which is as  
in English the  
Ji.

G and j conso-  
nant written  
one for another.

foundeth it as V consonant, as Trabájo, trauell, they pronounce Travájo: Palábras, words, they found Palábras: Cábra, a goat, Cábra: Labór, labour, Lavór: Albáda, a park, saddle, Alváda: Alabáda, a hoibard, Alaváda: so oftentimes in the beginning of a word, as Bay-  
lár, to daunce, Vaylár: Balquína, a petticoate, a kirtle, Valquína: Bellóca, an acorne, Vellóca:  
Berméjo, red colour, Verméjo: Bexica, a bladder, Vexica. wherefore I advise the studious  
in the Spanish tong, if he finde not a word in the Dictionarie, in one of these letters, let  
him turne to the other: as if he finde not Báyo, which is used in good Authors for Baycu-  
loured, or Bayard, let him looke Váyo, and there he shall finde the same: If not Váhar, to  
bathe, looke Bahár: If not Vóz, looke Bóz, a voice.

**B** In the midst of a word going before another consonant, and making the pronunciation  
harder, is cut off in Spanish, as Subtil, they write, Sutil, Absente, Ausente, Obscuro, Oscuro, or  
Efcuro.

**C** This letter hath two manner of soundings according to the vowels that follow it. If a o  
or u follow it, he is sounded as k, as in Cára, a face, Cóco, weuell, Cuchén, a spone: so like-  
wise in the middle of a word, as Descáño, rest, Escória, dross, Escudilla, a dish: but going be-  
fore c or ç, pronounce almost as the Italian z, as Prudentia, Discreta, or their t before a o, io,  
as Prudentia, Justificatione, Cecilia, powdered flesh, Ciruela, a plum.

**C** Before t, cut off as Acto, an act: the Spaniard saith, Acto, Pacto, a covenant, Páto.

Marked with a dash under it thus, called c, Cerilla, or Cedilla, is proper to the Arabique  
tong, from whence it was first taken: it is sounded by putting the tong to the ranches of  
the teeth, as the French c, then ca, or bette nere: the Italian z, as Dilligenza, Scienza. This c  
must be so pronounced, whether it be at the beginning, end, or middle of a word, though a o or  
u follow: and is sounded as in English Ch, as çaraguelles, great garconne of Spanish hose,  
çoçóbras, cross blows of fortune, çufre, byzantine: pronounce Thsraguelles, Thsloóbras, Thsif-  
fre, in like manner before e and i, as çenogiles, garters, çiento, a hundred: pronounce Thsçenogi-  
les, Thsçiento.

**D** Is pronounced in the beginning of a word, as in Latin, French, and Italian: as in En-  
glish, Dagger, Decoy: so in Spanish, Daga, a dagger, Doze, a dozen: this word Dios is ex-  
cept from this rule, and is pronounced as these that follow: that is, if d come in the midst  
or end of a word, you must pronounce him as d in Græke, as dh in English, as Cada, every,  
Cáda, fidelidad, fidelitie, fidelidhad.

**E** Is as the Latin, and the Italian, and as in English, Wend, Lend: so in Spanish, Bende-  
zir, to blesse, Bever, to drinke: and it must never be sounded so small as the English e, as fe,  
wee: nor so broad as the French do their e feminine, as Femme, a woman, pronounced Fami-  
ma, but betwixt both as first above.

**F** Is as the Latin and the Italian tongues, and last as the English. The Spaniard writeth  
him when the Latin write Ph, as Philosophus, in Spanish Filósofo.

**G** In answerable to the Hebrew Gimel, g hath two maner of soundings according to the vowels  
which follow it, if a o or u immediately followe, it is pronounced as in the Latin, Gabriel,  
Gorgias, Gubernator: Italian, Galante, Gotta, Gustare: French, Garçon, Gourmand: as in English,  
Gate, Gold, Gutter: so in Spanish, Gáto, a lazare, a leापour, Gófo, rude, Gúla, guttonie.

But if after the u immediately come a, as Guante, a glove, sound Gwante: Agua, water, Agwa:  
Mengua, want, Mengwa.

But if after u follow e or i, pronounce as the French Guerre, Guide: as in English Gueft, guide:  
so in Spanish Guerra, war, Guia, a guide: sound Ghera, Ghia, except these wordes follo-  
wing, Gufo, adle, Agüero, loth saying, Gargüero, the throat, Siguero, a drawer or tower of a  
boate with a roape, Huguero, a woodpile, Triguero, a sparowe that lieth in the wheate, Ci-  
guéna, a flooke, Pediguéno, wanton, Halaguéno, flattering, Siguénça, a citie of Spaine, Ver-  
guénça, shame, Agüelo, a grandfather, Degüello, a beheading, Regüello, belking, Vngüento,  
ointment: and wordes that come of the Infinitive mode in Guár, as Enxaguar, to water,  
Enxague, Menguar, to want, Mengue.

**G** Before e or i is sounded as the Latin Gero: Italian, Giorno: French, Gisant: English, Gef-  
rey, Giles: or more like the Spanish, called j jota, or j consonant, which is pronounced as  
sh in English: so they say Génir, to groane, pronouncing as it were written in English  
hemir, Gingibre, ginger, shinsibze.

For the Spaniard maketh no difference in speaking of this G before e and i, from the j conso-  
nant, and they write one for another, as Agéno, Lináge, Menláge, Lisongéro, Magestád, or  
Ajéno, Lináge, Menláge, Lisónjéro, Majestád.

**G** Before n in the middle of a word lost, as Ignominia, Inominia, ignominie, Ignorancia, Inorán-  
cia, ignorance.

**H** This letter is neither bowell nor consonant, but a note of aspiration, it is called in the  
Spanish as in the English Ache, which were more properly in my opinion to be called as  
some

some nations do, Ha, because it doth so import in pronouncing as in English, Harnes,  
Harnes, Hates, Hange.

**H** In the beginning of a word is pronounced in Spanish with more vehemencie and em-  
phasis, and in the middle of end of a word weakly and faintly.

In the beginning he must be pronounced with more force, or else there would be no difference  
found in speaking these wordes, and their like, Háca, a nagge: Acá hither: as Ven acá,  
come hither, Hásta, untill, and Hásta for a speare: Háya, a beech tree: A'ya, a nurse: Hálo, a  
spindle: Hálo, vse.

In the middle of a word not so forcible, as Ahechár, pronounce as Aechár, Alholi, Aloli, a barne  
or garner.

**H** Goeth before all the five vowels, as Hazér, to make or doe: Hécho, made or done: Higa-  
do, the liver: Hollin, the swete of a chimney: Hálo, a spindle. But it may not in true Spa-  
nish orthographie be written before a consonant, as Cristo, not Chrifto.

Besides it is lost after T, as Ortografia, not Orthografia, Teólogo, not Theólogo.  
with P also it is lost, and the P turned into F, as Filósofo, not Philósofo, which they must ob-  
serve that would write the Spanish tong aright in all that are like these.

where Ue followeth H, it is pronounced as W, Huéro, an orchard: Huéflo, a bone: pronounce  
Wuerto, Wueslo: or as if G went before thus, Gwerto, Gweflo, which I take to be more  
fit for the Englishmans pronunciation for these and the like wordes.

That word which beginneth with H, shall not have H in the middle, except C goe before it, as  
in Hécho, made, Hechizar, to bewitch and the like.

**I** There be three kindes of I in the Spanish, that is small i, Græke y, and j Jota, or conso-  
nant. These two i, y, with a verie small slender sounde, as the French and Italians doe,  
which is as the double e in English, we, the, see, decree, so in Spanish, Tirano, a tirant,  
Teerano: Vida, life, Veeda, not as Englishmen pronounce Teyrano, veida, which all other  
nations mislike in hearing them speaking Latine, saying, Propino cibi, they pronounce Pro-  
peino cibi, which I would wish they would but marke, and take notice thereof: for the  
French, Italian, and Spaniard, do learne and are taught by their Scholemasters to pro-  
nounce the Latine different from their owne tong, otherwise oration should not un-  
derstand another speaking the Latine. But in this tong as in the Italian and French,  
they must observe except they will fall into the vice of Iotacismus and be laughed at, and not  
be understood by strangers when they speake or reade.

This small i is used in a word as a bowell by it selfe, as Tinta, yncke, and in a diphthong, as Small i.  
Niéro, a nephew.

**Y** is put in the beginning of a word before a bowell or consonant, as yo, ya, yr, and in the ende Y.  
as Daréys, Podéys,

**J** jota, or consonant, which this tong taketh of the Arabique, is pronounced as in French, J pronounced  
Jamái, Deja, Jehan, in English like sh, as Jardin, a garden, hardin, Jarro, a pot sharro, ójó, like sh.  
an eie dho: Hoja, a leafe, Hoshja: Ovéja, a sheepe, Ouelha: Abéja, a bee, Abéja: In Se-  
uill and thereabout, they pronounce it not so much in the teeth, but more in the throte, as  
Chardin, Charro, Ozho, Hozha, Ovezha, Abezha.

Some authors in the Spanish write these wordes (yet ill) and the like, with H. Hierusalem,  
Hierónimo, which should be thus Jerusalem, Jerónimo.

**K** The Spaniard neuer useth this letter but when it is required of the Græke and proper  
names then sounded as in the English, as Kalendas.

**L, M, N, O, P.** Are all pronounced as in the Latine, French, Italian, and last  
as in English: But P may not be doubled in Spanish, as Apro- P not doubled.  
var, to approue, Aperiho, appetite, and not Approvár, Appetito. P before T in the middle of P cast away.  
a word is lost, as Captivo, pronounce Caurivo, captiue.

Neither can L be doubled in Spanish when the word cometh of the Latine, and keepeth the  
Latine sounde, as Lástre, in Latine Illustri: Silaba, in Latine Sylaba: Colégio, Collegium.  
So likewise of N, as Tirano, not Tiranno, in Latine Tyrannus, but when these keepe not  
the sounde of the Latine, looke hereafter in double Ll, n, and there you shall finde howe  
they are pronounced.

**Q** hath two pronunciations, not of his owne nature, but by reason of a bowell following  
him.

If u follow as in Latine and English, Quantitie, Quarter, so in Spanish Quando, when,  
Quartána, Quál.

But when ue or ui follow, it is to be pronounced as the Italian Che, Chi, or the French Que, Que, Qui  
Qui, as English Ke, Ki, as Quéstión, a Question or quarrell, Quéstion, Quieto, quiet, Kieto, pronounced as  
Ke, Ki.

R with

**R** With the Grekes and Latins termed *Litera canina*, so the Spaniard calleth him *Letra per-  
rina*, the doggish letter, because dogs in grinning their teeth, when they would bite, found  
this letter R. It is pronounced as the Latine, Italian, and French, but if it be in the be-  
ginning of a word it is sounded strongly, as the Grecians doe sound. The Spaniard saith  
Rayo, a sun beane, Réy, a king, or if it be doubled in the middelt of a word you cannot sound  
with too great vehemencie, as Barro, Clay, Cárro, a Cart. But if it be in the middelt of a  
word and single, with a gentle and milde pronunciation, as ara, an altar, Móro, a blacke  
horse.

**S** With x, z, and c, are pronounced (although the one more plaine and sounding, and the rest  
less) by putting the tongue to the roofe of the mouth, and then hissing out the voice with  
the lips open as a snake, and therefore the Grekes called this letter S by that hissing name,  
as also made it in fashion double as a snake, with his head lifted up, accordingly is it made  
in Latine, Italian, and Spanish. In Spanish these letters are called Culebrinas, which  
is snake, of Culebra, a snake, which beeth hissing.

This S in the beginning of a word as in Latine, Italian, and French, and in English  
Sand, Seeth, Sin, Shod, Sudden, so in Spanish Sabér, Sembrar, Sobra, Sudor.

But if S be single in the middelt of a word betweene two vowels, then with a gentle sound  
almost like Z, as the French doe, adding thereby great grace to their tongue, as *Eglise* a  
Church, *Causa*, so in Spanish *Causa*, *Rosa*, *uso*, *páso*. But if it be doubled, then strongly, as  
in English *Crossed*, *toiled*, so in Spanish *Fuéllemos gruéllo*.

In the end of a word as Z, as *Cárras*, *Letters*, *Cámaras*, *Chambers*, or going to *sciole*. And  
note that this letter cannot be in the beginning of a word when a consonant next follow-  
eth. Therefore you must write *Espero*, I hope, and not *Spero*. *Escrivo*, I write, and not  
*Scivo*.

**T** Is pronounced as in the Latine, Italian, French & English, except it can neuer sound  
ci, as the Latins, Italians, French and English doe when after c followeth i with a  
vowel, as in Latine *Prudentia*, Italian *Amicitia*, French *Justification*, English *Ambition*, in  
Spanish it must be written *Prudencia*, *Amicicia*, *Justificación*, *Ambición*, otherwise the  
writing were false, and you should pronounce Ti as in *Tibi*.

Also if H follow T, as *Theólogo*, *Theopómpo*, write and pronounce *Teólogo*, *Teopómpo*.

**U** Being a vowel not to be pronounced with a small sound as English, *Stue*, *Wue*, *Cruce*,  
*Flue*, but as the French doth in his diphthong *ou*, almost as the English *ou*, as *Tu*, *tou*,  
*Buche*, the maw, *Bouche*. But being a consonant is pronounced as in other languages in  
the beginning of a word, as *Vaca*, a Cow, *Véna*, a Veine, *Vino*, wine, *Voto*, a Vow, *Vilgo*,  
the common people, in the middelt of a word as *Aváro*, *Gávia*, *Iva*. Also when two *ou* come  
together, and a vowel following, the second is a consonant, as *úvo*, *Túve*, except *Vueltro*.

**X** Is one of the Culebrinas *léras*, the snake or hissing letters, as above said in the letter S, and  
is pronounced like J consonant, and the Spaniard often writeth one for another, as  
*Xarúe*, *Arrup*, *Jarúe*, and is pronounced as the French *ch*, as *Faxa*, a  
waftband, *Brúxa*, a hag, *Flóxo*, weakie, *Faxa*, *Brusha*, *Flosho*.

**Y** Is about in I.

**Z** Is called in Spanish *Zéca*, as the Hebrew *Zain*, from whence it is drawn, and from the  
Spanish tongue, and is pronounced as the English *Z*, as *Zángano*, a dzane, *Zélo*, zeale,  
*Zodiaco*, the Zodiacke, so likewise in the end of a word, as *Bóz*, a voice, *Crúz*, a Crosse.

**Ch** Before any of the five vowels to be pronounced as in English, *Chapman*, *Chiefely*, *Chic-  
ken*, *Chop*, *Chowse*: so in Spanish, *Chamelóte*, *Chamlet*: *Chiminea*, a Chimney: *Chorro*,  
a brooke: *Chúfma*, a companie of people of the common sort.

**Ll** As gl in Italian, as *Caragli*, *Moglie*, *Figli*, as double Ll in French, as *Fille*, *Coquille*, as Ll in En-  
glish, as *Llano*, plaine: *Llénó*, full: *Llover*, to raine: *Llúvia*, raine: pronounce *Llano*, *Lléno*,  
*Llover*, *Llúvia*: so likewise in the middle of a word, as *Querrellóso*, *Kerrelloso*, quarrel-  
some: in the end of a word neuer in Spanish written double, as *Mil*, a thousande, not  
*Mill*.

**ñ** As the Italian and French gn, *Montagna*, *Campagna*, French *Compaignon*, *Mignon*, in En-  
glish as ni: as *Montaña*, a mountaine, *Montaña*, *Campaña*, *Campania*, so *Daño*, losse, *Dannyo*,  
*Baño*, a bath, *Bannyo*.

S made like a  
snake doubled  
with his head  
lifted up.

Nota, S neuer  
in beginning of  
a word except a  
vowel follow.

T neuer turned  
in Ci in Span-  
ish, as in other  
tongues.

U pronounced  
broad as ou.

X pronounced  
as sh.  
X and j written  
often in Spanish  
one for another.

Ch as in Eng-  
lish Ch.

Ll pronounced  
as Li.

ñ pronounced  
as ni.

**A** Diphthong (according to the definition of Grammarians) is a sounding together of two  
different vowels, as if they were but one only, as in English, *Aide*, *Auditor*. Definition of  
diphthongs.

In Spanish there are twelve sorts.  
The first in ai, or ay, as *gaira*, and *ays*; *canáis*. But when two vowels come together  
and make more then one sound, they should be marked over head with two prickles, to take  
away confusion, as *Caida*, pronounced *Caida*, and so the rest.

The second in ao, where a is more sounded then o, as *Quaráo*, a nag, *Saráo*, a hall to dance.  
in, *Viláo*, a proper name of a towne, are pronounced in the same sort, as *Café maúle*.

The third in au, where a sounds more then u, as *Caula*; *Autor*; *Caudillo*: except *Laud*, a lute, 3. Au.  
*Arcaúda* tombe: *La-ú*; *Arca-ú*.

The fourth in ei and ey, where e is more sounded then i, as *Réy*, a king, *Léy*, a law: when 4. Ei, ey.  
they are leuere, write them with two prickles thus *Leikes*, *Rear*.

The fifth in eu, where e is most perceived, as *Féudo*, *Déudo*, *Réuma*: being disloyed write 5. Eu.  
thus: *Reúntar*, *Reúngir*.

The sixt in ia, in which i is more heard sound then i, as *Saia*, *Vaia*, *Malicia*, *Preséncia*; except 6. Ia.  
*Mia*, *Dia*; *Posia*, *Desia*.

The seventh, ie, ye, where e is most heard pronounced, as *Viéno*, *Sciéno*, *Viéne*, *Biéno*, *Quién*, 7. Ie, ye.  
*Quiéna*, *Arriéno*, *Dispiéno*, *Apriéno*, *Pie*, *Piédra*, *Tiérra*; *Ciélo*; *Infiérno*, *Diéz*, *Siéte*, *Miel*,  
*Hiel*.

The eight in io, or yo, where o is most sounded, as *Yo*, *Dió*, *Vió*: except *Mio*, *Rio*, *Frio*, *Tío*. 8. Io, yo.

The ninth in iu, where i is more heard then the u, as *Ciudad*, a citie. 9. Iu.  
The tenth in oi, or oy, as *Soy*, *Doy*, *Voy*, *Oygo*: except *Oydo*, *Roído*. 10. Oi, oy.

The eleuenth in ue, where e more sounded then u, as *Fuérca*, *Muérte*, *Fuérte*, *Cuerno*, *Nuevo*, 11. Ue.

The twelfth in ui, and uy, where u is more sounded then the i, as *Muy*, *Fuy*, *Cuidado*, *Háyo*. 12. Ui, uy.

Four Rules following shewing how every vowel maketh a  
seuerall syllable by himselfe, or is sounded  
in diphthong with another.

**The first Rule.**  
If betweene two vowels come h, or a consonant, such vowels cannot toyne themselves  
together to make a syllable of diphthong, as *Ahínco*, *Bolár*; except *Auré*, *Aurá*; *Auréis*,  
*Auréis*, where u, r and the vowel make a syllable, the like in *Auria*, *Auramos*.

**The second Rule.**  
If two vowels coming together, neither of them being i nor u, make two syllables, The second  
as *Nesémias*, *Polléer*, *Roér*, except these Hebrew words which end in two es, as *Osée*, *Rehabeem*,  
*Bersabée*. Rule.

**The third Rule.**  
When the first person of a verbe doth end in two vowels, and the first vowel being i, and  
the accent stand upon the same i, then that i maketh a syllable of it selfe without toyning it selfe  
with the vowel following, as *Embio*, *Embias*, *Embia*, *Embiámos*. *Porfio*, *Porfias*, *Porfian*. *Espio*,  
*Elpias*, *Elpian*. *Confio*, *Confias*, *Confia*.

**The fourth Rule.**  
But if the word doth end in two vowels, and the first of them being i, and the accent not  
on the first, then they make both the vowels a diphthong into a syllable, as *Grácia*, *Justicia*, *Da-  
niel*, *Ezechiél*, *Gabriel*, *Senténcia*, *Virória*, and in like sort doe they when they have the accent on  
the last of them, as *Pasión*, *Religión*, *Nación*, *Caución*, *Ración*, because they come of words of the  
Latine that have their accent in the *Antepositive*, therefore must the Spanish have it in the  
*Ultima*. Except these words in Spanish, *Anciano*, *Dioclesiano*, *Diábolo*.

**Of Triphthongs.**  
A Triphthong is a sounding of three vowels into one syllable with one breath together, and  
that after five sorts.

The first in iai, or yay, as *Vayays*, *Espaciays*, where a is heard more then i, 1. iay, yay.  
The second iey, or yey, where e is more sounded then i, as *Enfuziéys*: 2. iey, yey.  
The third in iue, or yue, where e is heard more then u, as *Hoyuelo*, *Arroyuelo*: 3. iue, yue.  
The fourth in uai, or yai, as *Guáy*: 4. uai, yai.  
The fifth in uei, or uey, as *Buéy*, *Buéyrie*: 5. uei, uey.



# Of Profodia or Accents, the seconde part of this Grammar.



**A** Orthographie handleth letters, so Profodie treateth of syllables, and the right sounding and pronouncing the same with their true accents, which is to make the syllable of woꝝde long or short, soft or sharpe, without the which the learner can not tell how to read or pronounce the tong, much lesse to be understood when he speaketh the same, whereby he shall be not onely disgraced, but be driven to bestow longer time, in forgetting that ill touch taken by, then he might be in going forward in learning fine times so much. The which being carefully looked vnto at the first, cannot but much adorne the speaker, make himselfe understood, as also giuing himselfe exceeding comfort in

going forward, when he knoweth hee singeth true harmonie, which cannot but delight those that will listen thereto.

Description of  
Profodia.

Profodia, is a rule or knowledge, shewing with what accent every syllable of a woꝝde is to be pronounced, as Cárcel, not Carcél a prison.

Spanish not  
subject to La-  
tine accents.

Many haue affirmed the Spanish tong to be subject to the Latine accents, seeing it is for the most parte deriued from the same, but common speech and vse shewe the contrarie in manie woꝝds, as Latin *Genesis*, in Spanish *Genesis*, *Sódama*, in Spanish *Sodoma*, *Helena*, *Heléna*, so in Latine *amor*, in Spanish *amor*, *autor*, *autór*, *Céresus*, *Cerézo*. But yet note this, that woꝝds deriued of the Latine doe keepe the accent of the Latine, except some proper names or woꝝds ending in d, l, n, or r, as *Abstinencia*, *Abstinencia*, *Obediencia*, *Obediencia*, *Beneficio*, *Blándo*, *Cadúco*, *Ceremonia*, *Cúlpa*, *Digno*, *Dóte*, *Familia*, *Fecúndo*, *Furiólo*, *Prémio*.

Of the Latine,  
the Latine ac-  
cent.

But if they end in d, l, n, or r, then they haue alwaies the accent in the last syllable, as *Amistád*, *Pestilencial*, *Camelón*, *Pastór*.

Words ending in  
D, l, N, or R,  
accented in the  
last syllable.  
Except these.  
Nota.  
Opus laboris.

Except some few ending in l, n, or r, ángel, ábil, apóstol, árbol, jóven, jóor, ánsar, ámbar, acíbar, acúcar, acófar, alcázar, nácar, tibar, cárcen, cáncer, carácter, cárcel, Cristóval, consúl, crimen, débil, deficiúl, móbil, inmóbil, fócil, dócil, Estéril, estiercol, fácil, Dátil, frágil, vtil, invtil, fértil, inábil, máñil, márgen, mártir, mármol, Trébol, órden, vírgen, exámen, volúmen, imágen, betúmen, Estévan, and verie fewe or none besides these, for that in setting these downe I ran ouer (as nere as I couide) every woꝝd in the whole Dictionarie, whereby you may coniecture, what paines, trouble, & time, such books of such method as this haue bestowed on them, before they can come forth to shew to the learner in a moment, that which the composer can hardly finde out in a moneth; but if any other there be, I haue accented them in their places, as all the woꝝds generally in the whole Dictionarie whatsoeuer to make the beginner, and also the well read to be perfect in the pronuntiacion, without which he shall be derided, as not understood when hee readeth or speaketh.

All woꝝnes in ion, and in or, accent in the last syllable, as *Occasión*, *Predicador*, so also in i, s, z, as *Alcaucí*, *Cortés*, *Pertináz*, *Cerviz*, except *Adivés*, a beast in Barbarie like a foxe, which barketh and crieth in the night as loud as a foxe.

2 Accents in  
one woꝝde.

Although in the Latine there is in no woꝝde but one accent dominant, yet in the Spanish often are two found, as *Ciértaménte*, *Fuértaménte*, wherefore I will set downe the order of the Spanish accenting, first giuing example of those woꝝdes which continually are accented, then of those which are sometimes, and sometimes not; last of all, those which haue two or three accents.

These woꝝds alwaies accented, as

Hé há  
yá yr  
aquí acá  
séa sóy  
cál bóy  
grán áy  
Augustín acullá.

These woꝝds following sometime accented, sometime not, as

Al, If it be an article, it is not accented, as *Dezid al Señor ésto*, Tell your master this. But if it be not an article, it is then accented, as *Penlád en ál*, Thinke on some thing.  
Aun, When que followeth it is not accented, as *Pédro aunque sépa morir no hará*, Peter although he knew he should die, he would not doe it. But asking a question it is then accented, as *Aún duérmes Pedro?* Doe you sleepe yet Peter?  
Ante, Being a Preposition is not accented, as *Ante Dios estámos*, We stand before God. But being an Aduerbe it is accented, as *Anté vino Pédro que Juan*, Peter came before John.

Cerca,

## Of Profodia or Accents.

11

Cerca, a Preposition not accented, as *Cerca todos dáa buen exemplo*, I haue all giue good example. But if it be a Verbe, Aduerbe, or woꝝne of this particie De going before or following, then it is accented, as *El Rey cerca con su gente*, que tiene, cerca de si, la ciudad y la rodéa cerca toda, y tiene la cerca de piedra, y de cerca parece fuere, The king doth besiege with his people, which he hath about him, the citie, and compasseth it all about, nere vnto it, which hath his wall of stone, and nere hand it seemeth strong.

Nota.

Demi, A possessive not accented, as *De mi padre heredé virtud*, Of my father I inherited vertue. But if it be not a possessive it is accented, as *De mí habláis segun véo*, You speake of me as I perceiue.

Del, The article not accented, as *Del virtuoso es la virtud amada*, Vertue is beloued of the honest. But if it be a woꝝne it is accented, as *Dios es bueno y dél nos viene el bien*, God is god, and from him cometh goodnes.

Do, Spoken indefinitely not accented, as *Do estuviere el bueno estaré yo*, Where the good man shall be, there will I be also. But spoken in asking a question it is accented, as *Dó está Juan?* Where is John?

El, Being an Article not accented, as *El bueno teme a Dios*, The iust feareth God. If it be a woꝝne then accented, as *Cristo nos ama y él nos redimió*, Christ loueth vs, and he it is that hath redeemed vs.

Entre, A Preposition not accented, as *Entre los santos desseo estar*, I desire to be among the goodly. But being a Verbe it is accented, as *Entré Pedro y no Juan*, I et Peter enter and not John.

Mas, The Coniunction not accented, as *No hagáis mal, mas hazed bien*, Doe not euill but doe good. But being an Aduerbe, then it is, as *Más quiero bive, &c. y es más querido*, He liuch moze at quiet, &c. and is better beloued.

Medio, In composition not accented, as *Medio en burlas, medio en veras*, Halfe in iest, halfe in earnest. If alone, then otherwise, as *Tened el medio en cosas*, Keepe a meane in matters.

Nos, Not accented, as *Hábla nos Jesús*, Christ telleth vs. But if it be a nonunative case to the verbe, then it is, as *Nós queremos, &c. we will, &c.*

Vn, Not accented, as *Vn hombre, A man*. But if y the Coniunction goe before, then it is, as *Dí le pan, y ún real*, I gaue him bread and five pence.

These woꝝds following not accented, as

Alo, Alos, Aunque, Con, De, Dela, Delo, Delas, Delos, De mis, Desde, Desque, Don, Doña, E, En, En mis, Enlo, Enlos, Enla, Enlas, Fray, Y, Lo, Le, Me, Micer, Mossen, as Micer fancho, y Mossen Pedro viénon, Master Sanches and Master Peter comes. Ni, Os, Pero, Pues, Por, Quan, Quel, San, Si, Su, So, Tan, Tal. Also all the Articles while they keepe the nature of Articles, which are these,

A, al, ala, alo, alas, alos,  
Del, dela, delo, delos, delas,  
El, la, las, Lo, los, le, les.

Words of two Accents.

Aíraménte, Hártobásta, Buénaménte, Biénditaménte, Ciértaménte, Bienaventuradaménte, Dié- Words of two  
framénte, Gráveménte, Gráfíolaménte, Yguálménte, Iúntaménte, Luéngaménte, Magníficaménte, Ra- Accents,  
zonábleménte, Ráraménte, Sábílaménte.

Words of three Accents.

Múy maláménte, Múy buénaménte.

Words of three  
Accents.

Of

# Of Etymologie and the Nowne.

Definition of  
Etymologie.



**Etymologie**, is a Rule of shewing and searching out the originall of words, with that pertaineth to them.

This searching out of originall and descendance of words is considered in diuers manners: but among the rest, for the beginners in any language whatsoever, this is so necessarie, that without it, they could not vnderstand or learne it: (The which by the Latine Grammarians hath bene, and is called Declension and Coniugation (which is likewise a declination) but that the former is of the Nownes, and the other of the Verbes.

The Spaninsh hath eight parts of Speech, as the Latine.

Nowne,  
Pronowne,  
Verbe,  
Participle. } declined.  
Coniunction,  
Preposition,  
Interiection. } vndeclined.

## Of the Nowne.

Nownes be deuised into Substantiuies and Adiectiuies, which are likewise deuised into Primitiuies, Deriuatiues.

The Primitiue, which is not deriued of any other, but is *Primū*, of himself, as *Abéja*, a bee. The Deriuatiue, is drawn from the Primitiue, as *Abejonázo*, a great Bee.

And of like nature to these Primitiue nownes, are these Interrogatiues, Reditiuies, and Diminutiuies following.

To the Primitiue, these following, and the like are subiect, as The Interrogatiue, as *Quién*? who? *Qual*? what manner? *Quánto*? how much? *Quántos*? how many.

The Relative which answereth to the Interrogatiue, as *tal*, such a one, *Tantos*, so many.

The Numerall to which these kinds following do belong, as

Cardinal, from which as from a fountaine the rest do spring, these do I wish the learner to haue by hart.

1 vno	21 veinte uno	1500 mil y quinientos
2 dos	22 veynte dos, &c.	2000 dos mil
3 tres	30 treynta	3000 tres mil
4 quatro	40 quarénta	4000 quatro mil
5 cinco	50 cinquénta	5000 cinco mil
6 seys	60 sesénta	6000 seys mil
7 siete	70 seténta	7000 siete mil
8 ocho	80 ochénta	8000 ocho mil
9 nuéve	90 novénta	9000 nuéve mil
10 diéz	100 cién, or cién to	10000 diéz mil
11 onze	101 cién to y vno	100000 cién mil
12 dóze	200 docientos y dozién to	1000000 millón
13 treze	300 trezién to	2000000 dos millónes
14 catörze	400 quatrocién to	3000000 tres millones
15 quinze	500 quinién to	
16 diés y seys	600 seyscién to	
17 diéz y siete	700 setecién to	
18 diéz y ocho	800 ochocién to	
19 diez y nuéve	900 nuéve cién to	
20 véyn te	1000 mil	

The ordinalls, which declare the order of a place or time, as *Primero*, segundo, tercero, quarto, quinto, sexto, sétimo, or seténo, octávo, nóno, or novéno, décimo, or dezéno, onzéno, dozéno, trezéno, carorzéno, quinzéno, décimo séxto, décimo sétimo, décimo octávo, décimo nóno, veinténo, veinténo uno, veinténo dos, &c. Treinténo, quarenténo, cinquenténo, sesenténo, setenténo, ochenténo, noventéno, centésimo, or cienténo, doscientén to, trezentén to, quatrocientén to, quinién to, seyscientén to, setecientén to, ochocientén to, nuevecientén to, milésimo.

Partatiues

Partatiues which signifie many severally, as *Cada vno*, euery one, *Entrámbos*, both of them, *ni vno, ni otro*, neither of them, or one among many, as *otro*, another, *algúno* some body. *Universals*, as *todos*, all: *ningúno*, no bodie. *Particulars*, as *Algúno*, some bodie. *Aduerbials*, signifying the Cardinall Numerals with this *Aduerbe vez*, as *una vez*, once, *dos vézes*, twice: *tres vézes*, thrise: *diez vézes*, ten times: *cien vézes*, a hundred times: *mil vézes*, a thousand times.

## Deriuatiues.

Deriuatiues, which haue contained vnder them these following, viz.

Of countries or townes, as *Aragónéz*, a man of Aragon: *Andalúz*, a man of Andalusia: *Granadino*, a man of the citie or countrie of Granada: *Gaditáno*, a man of Cadiz or Caliz. Of the nation, as *Dalmácios*, people of Dalmatia: *Inglésés* Englishmen, or people of England: *Escocésés*, Scottishmen: *Francésés*, Frenchmen: *Móros*, blacke Moors: *Túrcos*, Turkes. Words in ólo are deriuatiue of their Primitiuies, as *Mentirólo*, lying, of *Mentira*, a lie: *Clamorólo*, clamorous, of *Clamor*, clamor: *gloriólo*, &c. Of signifying excellence in údo, and ázo, as *Barúdo*, hauing a great long beard, of *Barba*, jarrázo, a great blowe with a cup, of *jarro* a cup: *Papúdo*, hauing a great wide thyoate, of *Papo* a thyoate: *Rodillázo*, a great blowe with the kne, of *Rodilla* a kne. Diminutiuies in *ico*, *ito*, *éta*, *uella*, *illo*, as *Boníco*, *Bonito*, prettie, good: *vaquéta*, *vaquilla*, a little come or heifer, of *Vaca* a cowe: *Ropilla* a little gowne or callocke, of *Ropa*: *Calderuella*, a little kettie, of *Calderón* a kettie: *Cardenillo*, somewhat blacke and blew, of *Cardéno* blacke and biewe.

## Of Numbers.

To Nownes as well Substantiuies as Adiectiuies, there are these affections following belonging, Number, Case, Gender.

The Number sheweth the quantitie, the Case the qualitie, and the Gender the sexe.

There are two Numbers, The Singular and the Plurall.

The Singular speaking of one, as *Libro*, a booke.

The Plurall of moe, as *Libros*, bookes.

This is a general Rule, if the singular number doe end in a vowel, the plurall number is made by putting to's, as *Palábra*, *palábras*, *Cuérpo*, *cuérpos*, *Muérte*, *muértés*, *Javalí*, *javalis*.

Except some few, which must haue es added to them, as *Rey*, *reyés*, *Léy*, *léyes*, *Fe*, *féés*, *Buéy*, *búeyes*, so in this manner all nownes ending in consonants must haue es added to them, as *Merced*, *mercédes*, *Ciudad*, *ciudadés*, *Mortal*, *morráles*, *Pastor*, *pastóres*, &c.

## Of Cases.

The Spaninsh hath Cases as the Latine, but all in one ending or termination, and are declined with an article, as the Dominatiue with *el la*, the Genitiue with the Preposition *De*, as the Italian and French, the Dative *Para*, the Accusatiue *a*, the Ablatiue as the Genitiue *de*.

## Of Genders.

There are three. The Masculine, as *El Padre*, the father. The Feminine, as *La Madre*, the mother. The Neuter, which is of small vse with the Spaniard, as *Lo sincéro*, *Lo malo*, for they speake by the substantiue, as *La Sinceridad*, *El mal*.

To knowe the Genders, obserue well these Rules following. All nownes ending in *io*, or *or*, are commonly of the Masculine gender, as *Cardinal*, a Cardinal, *Cárdo*, a Chistle, *Pastor*, a Shepherd. Except *la Cárcel*, a prison, *la Piel*, the skin, *la Cana*, a Cuttler, *la Equinóctial*, the Equinóctiall, *la Naua*, a battell at sea, *la Hiel*, gall, *la Sal*, salt, *la Mano*, a hand.

All Nownes for the most part in *a*, *i*, or *ion*, are of the Feminine gender, as *Manéca*, Butter, *Magistad*, *Adiustie*, *Deliberación*, *Deliberation*.

c i

Names

Names of trees commonly the Masculine gender, and the fruits the feminine, as

El Perú, a Pearre tree.  
El Ciruelo, a Plum tree.  
El Naranjo, an Orange tree.  
El Cidro, the Citron tree.  
El Manzano, the Apple tree.  
El Camués, the Hippen tree.  
El Cerézo, the Cherrie tree.  
El Alméndro, the Almond tree.  
El Avellano, the Hazell nut tree.  
El Castaño, the Chestnut tree.  
El Nogal, the Wallnut tree.  
El Azeituno, the Olive tree.  
El Olivo, idem.  
El Morá, the Mulberry tree.  
El Granado, the Pomgranat tree.

La Péra, the Pearre.  
La Ciruela, the Plum.  
La Naranja, the Orange.  
La Cidra, the Citron fruit.  
La Manzana, the Apple.  
La Camuesa, the Hippen.  
La Ceréza, the Cherrie.  
La Almendra, the Almond.  
La Avellana, the Hazell nut.  
La Castaña, the Chestnut.  
La Nuez, the Wallnut.  
La Azeituna, the Olive.  
La Oliva, idem.  
La Móra, the Mulberry fruit.  
La Granada, the Pomgranate.

Exception.

Except these whose tree and fruit are both Masculine, as

El Menbrillo, the Quince tree and Quince fruit.  
El Limon, the Limon tree and fruit.  
El Alvéchigo, the Appricoke tree and fruit.  
El Avercôque, idem.  
El Péro, the tree and fruit of a kinde of Apple, very rawe, and cold by nature, good to roste, red on one side.

Another exception.

Except these also whose fruit is the Masculine, & tree the feminine, as

El Higo, the fig. La Higuera, the fig tree. (tree.  
El Dátil, the Date. La Palma, the Date tree or Palme  
El Razimo, the bunch of grapes. La Parra, the Vine, or La vid.

Verbals in or make themselves feminine, by putting to a.

Verbals in or are of the masculine gender, and make themselves feminine, by putting to a, as Habladór, a prater, Habladóra, a the prater.  
Likewise Nownes in o, make their feminine, by changing o into a, as Honrado, honored, Honrada: Suégro, a father in law, Suégra, a mother in law.

## Of Declensions and of the Article.

Declension of the Article.

The Spanish (as likewise the Italian and French) have but one manner of Declension or declining, that is with the Article, which in Spanish is thus declined:

Article masculine Sing. { Dom. el.  
Gen. del. de lo.  
Dat. Para el, Para lo.  
Acc. a el, a lo.  
Ab. del. de lo. } Plu. { Dom. los.  
Gen. de los.  
Dat. para los.  
Acc. a los.  
Ab. de los. }

## The Feminine Article thus.

Article feminine Sing. { Dom. la.  
Gen. de la.  
Dat. para la.  
Acc. a la.  
Ab. de la. } Plu. { Dom. las.  
Gen. de las.  
Dat. para las.  
Acc. a las.  
Ab. de las. }

In the Spanish (as Italian and French) the Article Masculine is put oftentimes in steede of the feminine, when the word beginneth with a vowel, as el agua, the water, el alma, the soule: to make the pronunciation more sweete *Euphonia gratia*, and it may also be put la agua, la alma.

Nota.

Also in the Spanish (as Italian and French) the Article is never separated from Nownes Appellatives, neither in Singular nor in plural number: as Spanish, el libro, los libros, la cámara, a chamber, las cámaras. But in Nownes proper it is not used so: for it were absurd to say, el Francisco, la Juana: neither is it used with this word Dios, except there be joyned with it some *Epiheto*, as el Dios todo poderoso, God almightie.

## Declining

## Declining of a Nowne.

All nownes are thus declined, Sing. { Dom. el maestro.  
Gen. del maestro.  
Dat. para el maestro.  
Acc. a el, o al maestro.  
Ab. del maestro. } Plu. { Dom. los maestros.  
Gen. de los maestros.  
Dat. para los maestros.  
Acc. a los maestros.  
Ab. de los maestros. }

The feminine gender thus, Sing. { Dom. la doctrina.  
Gen. de la doctrina.  
Dat. para la doctrina.  
Acc. a la doctrina.  
Ab. de la doctrina. } Plu. { Dom. las doctrinas.  
Gen. de las doctrinas.  
Dat. para las doctrinas.  
Acc. a las doctrinas.  
Ab. de las doctrinas. }

Adjectives are declined like the Substantives both singular and plural number.

## Comparatives and Superlatives.

The Spanish to make comparison, in the Comparative degree useth this particle Mas, as Mas diligénte, more diligent, Mas vil, more vile: and to diminish, they use Menos, as Menos diligénte, lesse diligent, Menos vil, lesse vile.

## The Superlative.

The Superlative is made of this particle Muy, as Muy iusto, verie iust: sometime with ex- aggregating & magnifying a matter, they forme their Superlatives from nownes & adjectives, as Illustrissimo, Humanissimo, Hermosissima, most excellent, most humane, most beautiful.

These following thus compared

Buén, mejor, or mas buén.

Malo, peor, muy malo.

Grande, mayor, muy grande, or Grandissimo.

Chico, menor, or mas chico, muy chico.

Mucho, mas, muy mucho, or muchissimo.

Poco, menos, muy poco, or muchissimo.

There be also Adjectives of qualitie which are used with Comparative & Superlative, as nownes whereof they come, as Muy mas eleganteménte, much more eloquently, Muy mas discretamente, much more discretely: In like manner, Prepositions, as Derrás, behind, más Derrás, more behind, muy Derrás, much behind: Debáxo, beneath or vnder, más Debáxo, more below or vnder, muy Debáxo, much vnder or beneath.

## A Pronoun.

The Spanish Pronoun is as the Latine, like a Nowne, and is used in rehearsing, of a proper name of Pro and Nomen, i. for the name and in speech is used therefore.

Pronounes are divided into Primitives and Derivatives.

The Primitives are these, yo, tu, él, este, aquél, el que, aquel, el qual, que, quien, mismo, to which Mismo all before going may be coupled, as yo mismo, I my selfe: tu mismo, thou thy selfe: si mismo, himselfe: el mismo, he himselfe, and so may you say yo misma, tu misma, &c. they are called Primitives because they are Primi, first, and not derived of others.

Primitives divided into Demonstratives.

They are called Demonstratives because they shewe a thing not spoken of before, as yo, tu, Demonstratives

si, aquel, este, &c. Relatives as repeating or having relation to some thing spoken before, as el, este, que, Relatives.

Derivatives of Possessives, because they be derived of the Primitives and signifie possession, as belonging to some thing, as mío, or mío, yo, tu, mío, or tu, nuestro, vuestro.

In Pronounes are directly to be noted, the Persons, because all Pronounes and Particles





		Example.				
		Mascul.	Fem.	Men.	Mascul.	Fem.
Este.	Sing.	Dom. éste,	ésta,	ésto.	Dom. éstos,	éstas.
		Gen. éste,	ésta,	ésto.	Gen. éstos,	éstas.
		Dat. para éste,	para ésta,	para ésto.	Dat. para éstos,	para éstas.
		Accus. a éste,	a ésta,	a ésto.	Accus. a éstos,	a éstas.
		Abi. éste,	ésta,	ésto.	Abi. éstos,	éstas.

In the singular number of this Pronoun, the first word is in e, as éste, ésta, para ésta, &c. are of the Masculine gender: the second, ésta, ésta, para ésta, &c. of the Feminine: the third, as éste, ésta, &c. of the Neuter: but in the plural, the first is the Masculine & Neuter: the other the feminine gender.

In the Genitive case, we say éste, and éstos, casting away the first e, *Euphonia gratia*, that it might sound the smoother, yet one may also say, de éste, de éstos.

Aquéste, Aquésta, Aquésto, declined as in the example next above, and so is, E'le, E'la, E'lo: in Latin, *ille, illa, illud*: the Italians and French have no proper words to expresse it, but must be circumlocution: in English, he or that, near or next to the.

Mismo, Mismo, Mismo, declined after the same.

## Aquel, El.

Aquel, and El: in Latin, *ille illa, illud*: Italian, *Quello, colui, quella, Colei*: French, *Celui iceluy, Celle, icelle*, he or that which is neither near me nor the, declined both alike.

Note that this El, a Pronoun, and El the Article doe differ in declining, specially in the plural number. This making Ellos, and that Los, as by comparing the one with the other, the Reader may see: I like the declining of the Article El before in the Rowne.

		Mascul.	Fem.	Neut.			Mascul.	Fem.
Sing.	Dom. el,	ella,	d'ello.	Plur.	Dom. ellos,	ellas.		
	Gen. del,	d'ella,	d'ello.		Gen. d'ellos,	d'ellas.		
	Dat. para el,	para ella,	para ello.		Dat. para ellos,	para ellas.		
	Acc. a el,	a ella,	a ello.		Acc. a ellos,	a ellas.		
	Abi. d'el,	d'ella,	d'ello.		Abi. d'ellos,	d'ellas.		

Note that the Spaniard commonly useth this Pronoun Le before a Verbe thus, Le vino ala memoria, it came to his memorie: Le dixo, he told him: Que del alma le salia, which came from his soule: Dar le lo, to give him that: Le respondiò, he answered him.

Also the Spaniard useth this Pronoun Le joyned to the Infinitive mode of a verbe, by changing r of the Infinitive into l, *Euphonia gratia*, as Hablarle, to speake vnto him, Hablarle: Oírle, to heare him, Oírle: Verle, to see him, Verle.

Now followeth Que, Quien, El Qual, in Latin *Qui, Qui, Que, Quod*, in Italian, *Chi, Che, Il Quale*, in French, *Qui, Lequel, Laquelle*, in English, *Who, Which, Thus*.

Que, Quien.

		Dom.	Qué.
Sing. and Plural.	Sing. and Plural.	Gen. de Qué.	
		Dat. para Qué.	
		Accus. a Qué.	
		Abi. de Qué.	

In this same manner is Quien declined.

El qual.

				El qual.					
		Masc.	Fem.					Masc.	Fem.
Sing.	Dom.	el qual,	la qual,	la qual.	Sing.	Dom.	los quales,	las quales.	
	Gen.	del qual,	de la qual,	de lo qual.		Gen.	de los quales,	de las quales.	
	Dat.	para qual,	para la qual,	para lo qual.		Dat.	para los quales,	para las quales.	
	Accus.	a qual,	a la qual,	a lo qual.		Accus.	a los quales,	a las quales.	
	Abi.	del qual,	de la qual,	de lo qual.		Abi.	de los quales,	de las quales.	

## Of Verbes.

The Spanish tongue hath the same kinde of Verbes, Modes, Tenses, Numbers and Persons as the Latine. But for the verbe passive, they make of the verbe Soy, in Latine *Sumer, fui*, and a participle, as Amado, Leydo, Partido, as Soy Amado, Leydo, Partido, I am loved, read, parted, &c. with the Accusative case of particle Se, with the third person active singular or plural, as Se dize, it is saide, Se dizen, they are saide, as hereafter in their place more at large shall be declared.

Gerunds.

Also they have the Gerund in Do in the same manner as the Latines, as Amando, Leyendo, Oyendo,

Oyendo, in Louing, Reading, Hearing. But for the Gerund in Di and Dum of the Latine, they expresse after another manner. For Gerund in Di, the Spaniard useth the Infinitive mode and the preposition De, as De amar, of Louing, De leer, of Reading. For the Gerund in Dum, the Infinitive mode and the preposition A, or the Infinitive mode of Soy, as A amar, of Ser amado, to be loved, A oír, of Ser oydo, to be heard, &c.

And in like manner their Supines, *Amado, Leydo, Partido*, &c.

Supines.

And for Participles of the Active voice, *Amante, El que ama*, &c.

Participles.

For Participles of the Passive voice, *Amado, Lo que es amado*, &c.

For Participles of the Future in *Amante, El que ha de esperar*, &c.

For Participles of the Future in *Amado, Lo que ha de ser amado*, &c.

All which by particular examples following shall plainly be made to appere.

## Of Coniugations.

The Spaniard hath three coniugations, onely both of Verbes Regular, and Irregular.

- 1 The first endeth in ar, as Mirar, to behold: Hablar, to speake.
- 2 The second in er, as Perder, to lose: Caer, to fall.
- 3 The third in ir, as Oír, to heare: Cumplir, to accomplish.

## Tenses.

The first Person singular of the Indicative mode Present tense of all Verbes Regular, of what Coniugation soever, alwayes endeth in o, Miro, I beholde, Hablo, I speake, Pierdo, I lose: Oygo, I heare.

## Indicative mode.

Present perfect of the Indicative, of Verbes Regular, of the seconde and thirde Coniugation in ia, or ya, as Perdió, I did lose: Oíó, I did heare: Complicó, I did accomplish, &c. And of the first Coniugation all in ea, as Miró, I did behold: Habló, I did speake: &c.

First Preterperfect try, or i, as oí, perdió, I have heard, I have lost, but of the first Coniugation all in e, as Miré, I have beheld: Hablé, I have spoken: &c.

Second Preterperfect of all the three Coniugations of all Verbes with this Verb, Hé, and the Participle, as Hé mirado, I have beheld: Hé leydo, I have read: Hé oydo, I have heard.

Preterperfect of the Indicative of all Verbes Regular, & Irregular in re, as Hablaré, I will speake: Leyré, oydré, haré, podré, sabré, Daré.

The Terminations of Verbs thus varied as followeth.

Cuerie	Imperfect of the Indicative of the seconde and thirde Coniugation thus varied.	ia, ia, iamos, iades, ían,	or	ya, yas, yamos, yades, yan,	as	Perdió, Perdías, Perdió, Perdiades, Perdián,	as	oía, oías, oíamos, oíades, oían.
Cuerie	Imperfect of the Indicative of the first Coniugation, in áva, ávas, áva: ávamos, ávades, ávan, as Habláva, hablávamos, hablávamos, hablávamos, hablávamos, hablávamos, hablávamos.	re, ras, rémos, réys, rán,		of first, seconde, and thirde, Coniugation in	ir, oydré,	hablaré, perderé,		by adding é long or accent to the Infinitive mode.

## The Terminations of the Optative and Subiunctive.

Euerie	Present Tense of the Optative and Subiunctive of Verbes of the first Coniugation thus, by changing o, of the Indicative Present tense into e, thus,	as	hablé, hablés, hablé, hablémos, habléys, habléen.

Euerie	Present of the Optative and Subiunctive of the seconde and thirde Coniugation, by chaunging o, of the Present of the Indicative into a, thus,	as	perda, perdas, perda, perdámos, perdáys, perdan.

Euerie	Pretterimperf. of the Optative & Subiunctive of Verbes of the first Coniugation thus,	as	hablára, hablaría, habláse, habláras, hablarías, habláses, hablára, hablaría, habláse, habláramos, hablaríamos, hablásemos, hablárades, hablaríades, hablásedes, habláran, hablarían, hablásen.

Euerie	Pretterimperfect of the the Optative and Subiunctive of the seconde and thirde Coniug. thus,	as	perdiéra, perdería, perdiése, perdiéras, perderías, perdiéses, perdiéra, perdería, perdiése, perdiéramos, perderíamos, perdiésemos, perdiérades, perderíades, perdiésedes, perdiéran, perderían, perdiésen.

And these Pretterimperfect Tenses as all other of what Coniugation soever of Verbes Regular, and Irregular, forme two voices of themselves of the seconde person singular of the first Pretterimperfect Tense of the Indicative mode, by taking awaye Se, and by making it in the first Coniugation, ára, and áse, as of this seconde person of the Pretterimperfect of the Indicative singular, Reveláse, commeth the Pretterimperfect of the Optative, and Subiunctive Revelára, Reveláse, and of the seconde and thirde Coniugation of all Verbes Regular and Irregular, by changing that se, into éra and ése, as of this Indicative mode entendíse, commeth the Pretterimperfect of the Optative and Subiunctive, entendiéra, entendiése, of oyíse, commeth oyéra, oyése: of diste, diéra, diése: of estuviéste, estuviéra, estuviése: of anduviéste, anduviéra, anduviése: of pudiste, pudiéra, pudiése. And they forme the thirde voice of this Pretterimperfect by putting to ia, to the Infinitive mode, as of the Infinitive revelar, commeth this Pretterimperfect revelaría, of the Infinitive entender, entendería, of oyír, oyiría, of dár, daría, of estár, estaría, and ár, andaría.

Euerie	Future of the Optative and Subiunctive of verbes of the first coniugation, thus	as	Hablaré. Hablarés. Hablaré. Hablarémos. Hablarédes. Hablarén.
Euerie	Future of the seconde & thirde Coniugation of the Opt. and Subiunctive, thus	as	Perdiéste. Perdiétes. Perdiéste. Perdiéremos. Perdiéredes. Perdiéren.

Now it remaineth to give a Paradigma or example of every Coniugation of their Modes, Tenses, Numbers and Persons, that the Student in the tongue may forme the rest by, which is the chiefest point of this our Grammar, and without the which the learner shall never be able to write or speake but by ayme and rote, and so be discouraged from so laudable a purpose.

And

And for the better delight of the Reader, and for the assistance of these two tongues, as for the pleasure and profit he may reape hereby, I haue here in the Examples following, set downe the Italian, that the vnderstander of both tongues, may with one labour (and yet at his ease) see the difference, the one from the other, and be hereby able in vnderstanding, writing and speaking, to practise either of them, without vñing the one for the other, or mistaking them (a thing offensive to the Spaniards nature, as all knowe who haue travelled in Spaine.) For even as two things very like one to the other, if you see them at diuers times, and in diuers places, may easily make one miscarrie his memorie, and mistake the one for the other, when you see either of them againe by it selfe:

So if you see them both at one time, and in one place together, and take good heed of them by comparing them; no doubt by one marke or other, you shall euer after be able to discern, know and call them: euen so these two languages (sometime altogether so like) being thus laid together, will cause the Reader easily to discern and remember them.

## Aver and Sér.

And because this verbe Aver, in Latine Habere, in Italian Hauere, in French Avoir, in English to Haue, and Sér, in Latine Esse, Italian Essere, French Esre, English to Be, doe serue to the coniugating or declining of all other verbes: They are best in my opinion first to be declined, especially this verbe Aver, which may fitly be called Verbum auxilium, a helpfull verbe, because he doth not onely helpe to decline himselfe in his owne preterperfect and preterpluperfect, but doth serue to decline all other verbes whatsoever in the same tenses, as by the Examples following you may see. And this verbe Sér, as before serueth, as in the Italian and French to decline all verbes Passiues, for without it neither the Spanissh, Italian or French can forme or decline their Passiues, as following you may perceiue.

Aver and Sér.

The

The declining of the first Auxiliar verbe AVER, in Italian  
Hanere, in Latin Habere, in English to Have.

Indicative mode.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Yo HE, Tu ás, Aquel á o há. Plural. nosotros Avémos o Hémos vosotros Avéys. aquellos án o hán.	Io Ho & Haggio, Poetical. tu Hai, colui há, & háne, Poetical. Plural. noi habbiamo & haúemo, voi Hauéte, coloro Hánno.	Ego HABEO, tu Habes, ille Habet. Plural. Nos Habemus, vos Habetis, illi Habent.	I have. thou hast. he hath. Plural. we have. ye have. they have.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Avia, Avias, Avia. Plural. Aviamos, Aviades, Avian.	Hauéna & Hauén, Hauén, Hauéna & Hauén. Plural. Hauénamo & hauénamo, Hauénate, Hauénano & hauénano.	Habebam, habebas, habebat, &c. Plural. Habebamus, habebatis, &c.	I had. thou hadst, &c.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
uve, uifite, uvo o hávo o ovo, Plural. Uvimos, uifites, uviéron o huiéron o ovi- (éron.	Hébbi, hauésti, hébbe. Plural. Hauémmo, hauéste, hébbemo.	Habui, habuisti, &c. Plural. Habuiimus, habuistis, &c.	I have had, &c.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
yo He, tu ás, aquel á o há. Plural. nosotros hémos o avémos, vosotros aveys, aquellos án o hán.	Avido noi habbiamo, voi hauéte, coloro hanno.	Habui, habuisti, &c. Plural. Habuiimus, habuistis, &c.	I have had, &c.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Avia, aviás, avia. Plural. Aviamos, aviades, avian.	Avido hauénamo, hauénate, hauénano.	Habueram, habueras, &c. Plural. Habueramus, habueratis, &c.	I had had, &c.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Avré, Avrás, Avrá. Plural. Avrémos, Avréys, Avrán.	Haueré, haurá & haró, hauerái, haurái & harái, hauerá, haurá & hará. Plural. Hauerémo, haurémo & harémo, haueréte, hauréte & haréte, haueránno, hauránno & haránno.	Habebo, habebis, &c. Plural. Habebimus, habebitis, &c.	I shall have, &c.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
áyas tu. áya aquel, ayámos nosotros, ayáys vosotros, áyan aquellos.	Habbi tu, habbia colui, habbiamo noi, habbiáte voi, habbiamo coloro.	Habe, habes, &c. Plural. Habebitis, &c.	I have thou, &c.

The Spaniards use in stead of this Imperative mode, this word Ten of Tingo,  
I hold: which Tingo is often used of them for this verbe He.

This Imperative mode, Ten of Tingo, so commonly used for áyas, áya, is thus declined:

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Tén tu. Ténga aquel. Tengámos nosotros, Tened vosotros. Téngan aquellos.	Tén tu. Ténga quel. Tengamus nosotros, Tened vosotros. Téngan aquellos.	Tén tu. Ténga quel. Tengamus nosotros, Tened vosotros. Téngan aquellos.	I hold thou. let him hold. I hold we, or let us hold. I hold ye. I hold they, or let them hold.

The Optative mode is used with these signes, Oxalá, or esse Ohi, or Plaguissé a Dios: in Latin, *Primum*: in Italian, *O Dio voglia*, *O che*, *Dio volesse*, *O Dio che*: French, *Dieu velle*, *Pléss*, *a Dieu*: English, *would to God*, *I pray God*, *God graunt*. The Potential like the Latin, with these signes, *May*, *can*, *might*, *would*, *should*, *ought*: both declined like the Subiunctives following: but that the Optative and Potentiall alwaies make their future tense and Present tense alike, as Oxalá yo áya, I pray God I have: so in the future, Oxalá yo áya, I pray God I have hereafter: Oxalá yo Revele, God graunt I reveale: future tense also; Oxalá yo Revele, God graunt I reveale hereafter: and so of the rest.

And because the Optative and Potentiall have their future tenses al one with their Present: and the Subiunctive hath two futures, and both differing from the Present, I hold it needfull to decline the Subiunctive, by whom the other two are framed.

Subiunctive mode

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
áya, áyas, áya. Plural. ayámos, ayáys, áyan.	Habbia, habbi, habbia. Plural. habbiamo, habbiáte, habbiano.	Habeam, habeas, &c. Plural. Habeamus, habeatis, &c.	When I had. When thou hadst, &c.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
auria, uviéra, uviéssé, aurias, uviéras, uviéssés, auria, uviéra, uviéssé. Plural. auriamos, uviéramos, uviéssémos, auriades, uviérades, uviéssédes, aurian, uviéran, uviéssén.	Quando auria, uviéra, uviéssé, aurias, uviéras, uviéssés, auria, uviéra, uviéssé. Plural. auriamos, uviéramos, uviéssémos, auriades, uviérades, uviéssédes, aurian, uviéran, uviéssén.	Cum haueré, haueria, haueréssé, hauerésti, haueréssis, haueréssés, hauerébe, haueria, haueréssé. Plural. hauerémmo, haueréssimo, haueréste, haueréssis, haueréssés, hauerébono, haueriano, haueréssero.	When I had, &c. When thou hadst, &c.

Decline with H. Huiéra, Huiéssé, or Oviéra, Oviéssé.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
áya, áyes, áyas, áya. Plural. ayámos, ayáys, áyan.	Habbia, habbi, habbia. Plural. habbiamo, habbiáte, habbiano.	Haberim, haberis, &c. Plural. Haberimus, haberitis, &c.	When I have had, &c.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
uviéra, or uviéssé, uviéras, or uviéssés, uviéra, or uviéssé. Plural. uviéramos, or uviéssémos, uviérades, or uviéssédes, uviéran, or uviéssén.	Quando uviéra, or uviéssé, uviéras, or uviéssés, uviéra, or uviéssé. Plural. uviéramos, or uviéssémos, uviérades, or uviéssédes, uviéran, or uviéssén.	Cum haueré, hauerá, haueréssé, hauerésti, haueréssis, haueréssés, hauerébe, hauerá, haueréssé. Plural. hauerémmo, haueréssimo, haueréste, haueréssis, haueréssés, hauerébono, hauerá, haueréssé.	When I had had, &c.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
uviére, uviéres, uviére. Plural. uviéremos, uviéredes, uviéren.	Quando uviére, hauerá, haueréssé, uviéres, hauerá, haueréssé, uviére, hauerá, haueréssé. Plural. uviéremos, hauerémo, haueréssé, uviéredes, haueréte, haueréssé, uviéren, hauerá, haueréssé.	Cum haueré, hauerá, haueréssé, hauerésti, haueréssis, haueréssés, hauerébe, hauerá, haueréssé. Plural. hauerémmo, haueréssimo, haueréste, haueréssis, haueréssés, hauerébono, hauerá, haueréssé.	When I shall have hereafter, &c.

The declining of the first Auxiliary verbe AVÉR in Italian  
Havere, in Latin Habere, in English to Have.

Indicative mode.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Yo HE, Tu ás, Aquél á o há. Plural. nosotros Avémos o Hémós vosotros Avéys. aquellos án o hán.	Io Ho & Haggio, Poetical. tu Hai, colui há, & háme, Poetical. Plural. Noi habbiamo & hauémo, voi Hauéte, coloro Hanno.	Ego H A B E O, tu Habes, ille Habet. Plural. Nos Habemus, vos Habetis, illi Habent.	I have. thou hast. he hath. Plural. we have. ye have. they have.
Avia, Avias, Avia. Plural. Aviamos, Aviades, Avian.	Hauéa & Haua, Hauéi, Hauéa & Haua. Plural. Hauénamo & hauénamo, Hauénate, Hauénano & hauénano.	Habebam, habebas, habebat, &c.	I had. thou hadst, &c.

1st preter- perfect	úve, uviste, úvo o hávo o hovo, Uvimos, uviste, Luvieron o huvieron o ovi-	Hébbi, hauésti, hébbe. Hauénmo, hauénste, hébbero.	Habui, habuisti, &c.	I have had, &c.
---------------------------	---	---	-------------------------	-----------------

2nd perfect	yo He, tu ás, aquél á o há. nosotros hémós o avémos, vosotros avéys, aquellos án o hán.	Avido noi habbiamo, voi hauéte, coloro hanno.	Habui, habuisti, &c.	I have had, ec.
----------------	--	--	-------------------------	--------------------

pluper- fect tise	Avia, aviás, avia. Aviamos, aviades, avian.	Avido Hauénamo, hauénate, hauénano.	Habueram, ec.	I had had, ec.
----------------------	--	--	------------------	-------------------

futur	Avré, Avrás, Avrá. Avrémos, Avréys, Avrán.	Haueré, haueré & haré, hauerái, hauerái & harái, hauerá, hauerá & hará. Hauerémo, hauerémo & harémo, haueréte, haueréte & haréte, hauerénmo, hauerénmo & harénmo.	Habebo, ec.	I shal o will have, &c.
-------	---	--	----------------	----------------------------

Imperative mode.	Avia tu, Avia aquel, ayámos nosotros, ayá vosotras, ayá aquellos.	Habbi tu, habbia colui, habbiamo noi, habbate voi, habbiano coloro.	Habe, habeo, ec.	Have thou, ec.
------------------	---	---	---------------------	-------------------

The Imperative is in Latin of this Imperative mode, Ten of Tingo, so commonly used for ayas, áya, is thus declined: Ten tu, Tenga aquel, Tenganam nosotras, Tened vosotras, Tengan aquellos.

This Imperative mode, Ten of Tingo, so commonly used for ayas, áya, is thus declined: Ten tu, Tenga aquel, Tenganam nosotras, Tened vosotras, Tengan aquellos.

The Optative mode is used with these signs: Oxala, or esse Ohi, or Plugieffe a Dios: in Latin, Vinam: in Italian, O Dio voglia, O che, Dio volesse, O Dio che: French, Dieu vüelle, Pléust a Dieu: English, would to God, I pray God: God graunt. The Potential like the Latin, with these signs, May, can, might, would, should, or ought: both declined like the Subiunctives following: but that the Optative and Potential always make their future tense and Present tense alike, as Oxala yo áya, I pray God I have: so in the future, Oxala yo áya, I pray God I have hereafter: Oxala yo Revele, God graunt I reveale: future tense also; Oxala yo Revele, God graunt I reveale hereafter: and so of the rest.

And because the Optative and Potential have their future tenses at one with their Present: and the Subiunctive hath two futures, and both differing from the Present, I hold it needfull to decline the Subiunctive, by whom the other two are framed.

Subiunctive mode

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
áya, áyas, áya. ayámos, ayáys, ayán.	Hábbia, hábbi, hábbia. Habbiamo, habbiáte, habbiamo.	Habeam, Habeas, &c. Cum	When I had. When thou hadst, &c.

auria denotat tempus inchoandi Utiere tempus presentis Utiere tempus futurum	auria, uviéra, uviéffe, aurias, uviéras, uviéffes, auria, uviéra, uviéffe. ayámos, uviéramos, uviéffemos, auriades, uviérades, uviéffedes, aurian, uviéran, uviéffen.	Quando haueré, haueré, haueré, hauerésti, hauerésti, hauerésti, hauerébbe, hauerébbe, hauerébbe. hauerénmo, hauerénmo, hauerénmo, haueréste, haueréste, haueréste, hauerébbmo, hauerébbmo, hauerébbmo.	Cum habuerim, habuerim, habuerim, ec.
---	--	--	---

Perfect Como	áya, áyas, áya. ayámos, ayáys, ayán.	avido. Quando hábbia, hábbi, hábbia. habbiamo, habbiáte, habbiamo.	Hauéto. Cum habuerim, ec.	When I have had, &c.
-----------------	---	--	---------------------------------	----------------------

pluper- fect Como	uviéra, o uviéffe, uviéras, o uviéffes, uviéra, o uviéffe. uviéramos, o uviéffemos, uviérades, o uviéffedes, uviéran, o uviéffen.	avido. Quando haueré, haueré, haueré, hauerésti, hauerésti, hauerésti, hauerébbe, hauerébbe, hauerébbe. hauerénmo, hauerénmo, hauerénmo, haueréste, haueréste, haueréste, hauerébbmo, hauerébbmo, hauerébbmo.	Hauéto. Cum habuerim, habuerim, habuerim, ec.	When I had had, &c.
-------------------------	--	---	---	---------------------

first future Como	uviére, uviéres, uviére. uviéremos, uviéredes, uviéran.	Quando haueré, haueré, haueré, hauerésti, hauerésti, hauerésti, hauerébbe, hauerébbe, hauerébbe. hauerénmo, hauerénmo, hauerénmo, haueréste, haueréste, haueréste, hauerébbmo, hauerébbmo, hauerébbmo.	habuerim, habuerim, habuerim, ec.	When I shall have here- after, &c.
-------------------------	--	--	--------------------------------------	---------------------------------------



## Declining of Verbes.

Second Future Como	aure, aurás, aurí.	haveré, haverás, averé.	habere, or.	When I shall have hereafter, &c.
	avido. Quando	haverémo, haveréis, haverámo.	habuero. Cum	

## Infinitive mode Present tense

AVER ], Haveré, ] Habere, ] to have.

Averé avido, ] Haveré habuero, ] Habuisse, ] to have had.

## The future tense

Espero de aver, ] Douer haueré, ] Habiturum esse, ] to have hereafter.

Aviendo, ] Haviendo, ] Habendo, ] in having.

Avido, ] Hauto, ] Habitu, ] I had.

## Participle of the future tense

El que espera de aver, ] Effere per haueré, ] Habiturus, ] to have hereafter.

The other verbum Auxiliarum Ser, with which all Passives are declined: it is in Latin Sum, es, fui: in Italian Essere, to Be.

## Infinitive mode

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Yo SOY, tu és, aquél es.	Io SONO, tu sei, colui è.	Sum, es, est.	I Am, thou art, he is, &c.
Pres. Plu. nosotros Somos, vosotros soys, aquéllos són.	Plu. Noi siamo, voi siete, coloro sono.	Plu. Sumus, estis, sunt.	

Imperfect. éra, éras, éra.	érea, éreis, érea.	eram, eras, erat.	I was, &c.
éramos, érades, éran.	erámo, & eravámo, eraváte, éran.		

First Preter-perfect. Fui, fuiste, Fui.	Fui, fuisti, fui.	Fui, &c.	I have been, &c.
Fuimos, fuistes, fueron.	Fuimo, fuistis, fuerunt.		

2. 3. Second Preter-perfect. He, or vive, ás, or viviste, á, or vivo.	Sóno, sei, e.	Fui, &c.	I have been, &c.
Avémos, or vivimos, auéys, or vivistes, án, or vivieron.	Sído, síde, síno.		

Plu-perfect. Avia, avias, avia.	érea, éreis, érea.	Fuero, &c.	I had been, &c.
Avíamos, aviades, avian.	eravámo, eraváte, éran.		

Future

## Declining of Verbes.

Future	Seré, serás, seré.	Saré, & seré, serás, & seré.	When I shall be, &c.
	Serémos, seréis, serán.	Sarémos, saréis, sarán.	

## Imperative mode

Sé tu, or séy tu, sea aquél.	Sí, & se séy tu, & se colui, & se colui.	Sí, & se séy, & se colui.	Be thou, Be he or let him be, &c.
Seámos nosotros, sed vosotros, sean aquéllos.	Síamo noi, síate voi, & se colui.	Simus, & se colui.	

## Subjunctive mode.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
yo SEA, tú seas, aquél sea.	Io SIA, tu sia, colui sia.	Sim, sis, &c.	When I am, &c.
Pres. Como seámos, seáis, sean.	Quando síamo, síate, & seño.	Cum	
fuerá, será, fuéste, fueras, seras, fuédes, fueras, seras, fueras, seras.	Quando fuerá, será, fuéste, fueras, seras, fuédes, fueras, seras.	Cum	
Como fueramos, fuerades, fueran, fueran, fueran, fueran.	Quando fuerámo, fuerades, fueran, fueran, fueran, fueran.	Cum	

Preter-perfect. Como ayá, ayas, ayá.	Sído. Quando síamo, síate, & seño.	Cum	When I have been, &c.
ayámo, ayáis, ayán.	ayámo, ayáis, ayán.		

Imper. Como aviera, or viviera, avieras, or vivieras, aviera, or viviera.	Quando aviera, or viviera, avieras, or vivieras, aviera, or viviera.	Cum	When I had been, &c.
aviera, or viviera, avieras, or vivieras, aviera, or viviera.	Quando aviera, or viviera, avieras, or vivieras, aviera, or viviera.	Cum	

Plu-perfect. Como fuere, fueres, fueren.	Quando fuerá, fueras, fueren.	Cum	When I shall be, &c.
fuerámo, fuerades, fueren.	fuerámo, fuerades, fueren.		

## Declining of Verbes.

second Futur Como	avré, avrá, avrá,	Sido. Quando,	faré, farás, fará,	} stato. Cum } fuero, } When I shall be, &c.
	avrémos avréys, avrán,		farémo, faréys, farán,	

## Infinitive mode, Present Tense.

SE'R,]	Esse,]	Esse,]	To be.
AVE'R fido,]	Esse fido,]	Esse fido,]	Interperfect and Imperfect.
			To have bene.
			Future Tense.
Auér,	doner essere,	fore,	To be here-
de'sér,	haber ad essere,	futurum esse,	after.
			Gerund.
Siéndo,]	Essendo,]	Ché Latine wants,]	In being.
			Participle.
SYDO]	stato,]	bone.	

1. Conjug.  
of Regular  
Verbes in  
AR, RE-  
VELAR

An Example of the first Coniugation of Verbes Regular in  
AR, as Revelár] in Italian *Rivelare*] Latine *Revelare*]  
in English] to Reueale or discover, as Revelár,  
in Spanih is also as Revelár, to rebell.

## Indicative mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pref.	yo REVELO, tu Revelás, aquel revelá,	IO RIVÉ LO, tu riveli, colui rivela,	Renolo, reuelas, reuelat, &c.	I reueale, Thou reuea- lest, &c.
	revelámos, reveláys, Revelán.	riuelámo, riueláte, riuelano,		
Imper fect.	reveláva, revelávas, reveláva,	riueláua, riueláui, riueláua,	reuelabam, &c.	I did reueale,
	revelávamos, revelávades, revelávan,	riueláuamo, riueláuáte, riueláuano,		
First Perf.	revelé, reveláste, revelé,	riueláti, riuelásti, riuelé,	reuelauí, &c.	I haue reuea- led, &c.
	revelámos, revelástes, reveláron,	riueláuimo, riueláuísti, riueláurono, riueláron, riueláron, riueláron, riueláron.		

## Declining of Verbes.

second Perf.	hé, or úve, ás, or uvisse, á, or úvo,	reveládo.	ho, há, há,	riueláto	reuelauí, &c.	I haue reuea- led, &c.
	avémos, or uvimos avéys, or uvisstes, án, or uviéron,		habbiámo, habbiáte, hámmo,			
Plus perfect.	avia, avías, avian,	reveládo.	haueáua, haueáui, haueáua,	riueláto	reuelaueram, &c.	I had reuea- led, &c.
	aviámos, aviádes, avian,		haueámo, haueáate, haueáano,			
Futur.	revelaré, revelarás, revelará,		riuelaré, riuelarái, reuelará,		reuelabo, &c.	I shall or will reueale, &c.
	revelarémos, revelaréys, revelarán,		riuelarémo, riuelaréys, riuelaránmo,			

Oftentimes for the Future of this Indicative Mode, as well of this first Coniugation, as of al the rest, is used the Infinitive Mode, and the Present tense of the Verbe AVer, with a No-Particle going betweene them, as Revelár lo hé, Revelár lo há, Revelár lo á And so of the other Coniugations, as Entender lo he, Entender lo ás, or lo hé, or lo há, &c.

## Imperative mode.

revelá tu, reuele aquel, Plu.	riuelá tu, riuelá colui,	reuele, reueláto reueles, reuelato	Reueale thou, hee thou reuea- led, &c.
reuelémos nosótro, reuelád vosótro, reuelán aquéllos,	riuelámo noi, riueláte voi, riuelámo coléro,	reuelemus, reuelatin, reuelent.	

## Subiunctive mode with signes, Si, Como, or other Coniugation.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pref.	Yo Revelé, tu Revelés, aquel Revelé.	Io Riveli, tu Riveli, colui Riveli.	Riuelam, &c.	When I doe Reueale, &c.
Como	Reuelémos, Reueléys, Reuelén.	Quando Riuelámo, Riueláte, Riueléno.	Cum Riuelámo, Riueláte, Riueléno.	
Imper fect.	Reuelára, reuelaría, reueláste, Reueláras, reueláras, reuelástes, Reuelára, reuelaría, reuelásti,	Quando Riuelássi, riuelássi, riuelaría, Riuelásti, riuelásti, Riuelásti, riuelásti, riuelaría,	Cum Riuelássi, riuelássi, riuelaría, Riuelásti, riuelásti, riuelaría, Riuelásti, riuelásti, riuelaría,	Reuelarem, &c.
Como	Reueláramos, reueláramos, reuelásemos, Reuelárades, reuelárades, reueládes, Reueláram, reueláram, reuelásem,	Quando Riuelássimo, riuelássimo, Riuelásti, riuelásti, Riuelásti, riuelásti, riuelaría,	Cum Riuelássimo, riuelássimo, Riuelásti, riuelásti, riuelaría, Riuelásti, riuelásti, riuelaría,	When I did Reueale, &c.

## Declining of Verbes.

perfect. Como	Revelado.	Quando	Revelato.	Cum	when I have revealed, &c.
ayá, ayás, aya,		Hábia, hábbi, hábbia,		Revelaverim, &c.	
ayátos, ayás, ayan.		Habbiám, Habbiáte, Habbiám.			
1. Plu- perfect Como	Revelado.	Quando	Revelato.	Cum	when I had revealed, &c.
uviéra o2 uviéste, uviéras o2 uviéste, uviéra o2 uviéste,		Hauéss, hauéssi, hauéss,		Revelassem, &c.	
uviéramos o2 uviésemos, uviérades o2 uviédesdes, uviéran o2 uviessen,		hauéssim, hauéssite, hauéssero,			
first future Como	Revelaré, Reveláres, Revelaré,	Quando	Revelato.	Cum	when I shall reveal, &c.
Reveláremos, Reveláredes, Reveláren,		Haueró, hauerás, hauerá,		Revelauero, &c.	
Secd Futur Como	Revelaré, Reveláres, Revelaré,	Quando	Revelato.	Cum	when I shall reveal, &c.
uviére o2 avré, uviéres o2 avrés, uviére o2 avrá,		Haueró, hauerás, hauerá,		Revelauero, &c.	
uviéremos o2 avrémos, uviéredes o2 avrés, uviéren o2 avrán,		hauerémo, haueréte, hauerámo,			

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

Revelár, ]	Rinelare, ]	Revelare, ]	to Reueale o2 discover.
Aver revelado, ]	Hauer rinelato, ]	Reuelauisse, ]	to have Reuealed.
Aué o Esperár	The future tense.		
de Revelár,	{ Douer Rinelare, Effere per } to Reueale		
	{ Rinelare, Hauer a Rinelare, } hereafter.		
Reveládo, ]	Rinelando, ]	Reuelando, ]	in Reuealing.
a Revelár, ]	Supine of the Active signification.		
	a Rinelare, ]	Reuelatum ]	to be about to Reueale.
De ser Revelado ]	Supine of the Passive signification.		
	D'effere Rinelato ]	Reuelatu ]	to be Reuealed.
El que Revela, ]	Rinelante, ]	Reuelans, ]	Reuealing.
Reveládo ]	Participle of the Preter tense and Passive voice.		
	Rinelato, ]	Reuelatus, ]	Reuealed.

All verbes which haue their Infinitives in AR, are declined in all points like this here declined, except the Irregulars here following in ar.

## Declining of Verbes.

## An Example of the second Coniugation of verbes

Regular in ER, as Entender, in Italian Intenderé,

Latin Intelligere, to Understand.

2. Coniug.  
of Regular  
verbs in er  
Entender.

## Judicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
	yo ENTIENDO,	Io Intendo,	Intelligo, &c.	I do Under-stand, &c.
Pres.	tu Entiendes,	tu Intendi,	Intelligis,	
	aque! Entiende.	colái Intende.		
	Plurall.	Plur.		
	Entendémós,	Intendiamo,		
	Entendéys,	Intendete,		
	Entienden.	Intendino.		
	Entendia,	Intendena & Intendea,	Intelligam, &c.	I did Under-stand, &c.
Imper. fecit.	Entendias,	Intendui,		
	Entendia.	Intendena & Intendea,		
	Entendiamós,	Intendamo,		
	Entendiades,	Intendete,		
	Entendian.	Intendano.		
	Entendi,	Intesi,	Intelli,	I have Under-stood, &c.
first perfect.	Entendiste,	Intendisti,		
	Entendio,	Intesi,		
	Entendimos,	Intendimus,		
	Entendistes,	Intendistis,		
	Entendieron.	Intendieron.		
	2 3			
	He o2 uve,	HO	Intesi,	I have Under-stood, &c.
	as o2 uviste,	hás	Intesi,	
	a o2 uvo.	ha	Intesi,	
	Entendido.	habbiám	Intendimus,	
	hémós o2 uvimos,	bauéte	Intendistis,	
	avéys o2 uvisstes,	hánno	Intendieron.	
	án o2 uviéron.			
	Avia,	hauéna	Intelligam, &c.	I had Under-stood, &c.
	avias,	bauéni	Intelligam, &c.	
	avia.	hauéna	Intelligam, &c.	
	Entendido.	hauénám	Intelligam, &c.	
	Aviámós,	bauénate	Intelligam, &c.	
	aviades,	bauénano	Intelligam, &c.	
	avian.			
	Entenderé,	Intenderó,	Intelligam, &c.	I shall or will Understand.
	Entenderás,	Intenderás,		
	Entenderá.	Intenderá,		
	Entenderémós,	Intenderémo,		
	Entenderéys,	Intenderéte,		
	Entenderán.	Intenderámo,		

## Imperative mode.

Entiende tu,	Intendi tu,	Intellige, Intelligito.	Understand thou,
Entiende aquel.	Intendi a colui,	Intelligat, Intelligito.	Understand he of let him understand.
Entendámos nosóros,	Intendámo nos,	Intendámo nos,	
Entendé vosóros,	Intendé vos,	Intendé vos,	
Entiendan aquéllos.	Intendano colui.	Intendano colui.	





O Y R  
declined.

The Third and Last Coniugation of verbes Regular in IR, and YR.

Subiunctive mode

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
O Y A, o, yga, oyas, o, ygas, oya, o, yga,	OD A, odi, oda,	Audiam, &c.	When I heare.
Como: oyamos, o, ygamos, oyays, o, ygayys, oyan, o, ygan.	Quando: odiamo, odiato, odano.	Cum	
Oyera, oyeria, oyesse, oyeras, oyerias, oyesses, oyera, oyeria, oyesse.	Quando: Vdissi, vdirei, vderia, vdissi, vdiresti, vderia, vdissi, vdirebbe, vderia.	Audirem, &c.	When I did heare, &c.
Como: oyramos, oyramos, oyessimos, oyrades, oyriades, oyessedes, oyran, oyrian, oyessien.	Quando: vdissimo, vdiremo, vdisse, vdireste, vdissero, vdirebbono, vdiriano.	Cum	
A'ya, ayas, aya.	Quando: Habbia, habbi, habbia.	Audierim, &c.	When I haue heard, &c.
Como: ayamos, ayays, ayan.	Oydo, Quando: habbiamo, habbiato, habbiano.	Vdito. Cum	
Uviéra, o, uviéffe, uviéras, o, uviéffes, uviéra, o, uviéffe.	Quando: Hauéssi, hauerei, haueria, hauéssi, haueresti, haueria, hauéssi, hauerébbe, hauria.	Audiuissim, &c.	When I had heard, &c.
Como: uviéramos, o, uviéffimos, uviérades, o, uviéffedes, uviéran, o, uviéffien.	Oydo, Quando: hauéssimo, haueremo, hauéste, hauereste, hauéssero, hauerébbono, hauriano.	Vdito.	
Oyére, oyéres, oyére,	Cum	Audiuro, &c.	When I shall heare, &c.
Como: oyéremos, oyéredes, oyéren.			
Uviére, o, auré, uviéres, o, aurás, uviére, o, aurá.	Quando: Hauero, hauerdi, hauerá.	Cum Audiuro, &c.	When I shall heare.
Como: uviéremos, o, aurémos, uviéredes, o, auréys, uviéren, o, aurán.	Oydo, Quando: hauerémo, haueréte, hauerémo.	Vdito.	

Infinitive mode present tense

O Y R, ]	Vdire, ]	Audire, ]	to heare.
avér Oydo ]	hauer Vdito, ]	Audiuisse, ]	to haue heard.
	The Future tense		
avér de Oy,	douer Vdire, hauer ad Vdire, esser per Vdire,	Audium esse, ]	to heare hereafter.

Gerund

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Oyendo, ]	Odendo, ]	Audiendo, ]	In hearing.
a Oy, ]	Vdire, ]	Audium, ]	to heare.
	Supine of the Passive voice.		
de ser Oydo, ]	desse Vdito, ]	Audiri, ]	to be heard.
el que Oye, ]	chi Ode, ]	Audienti, ]	hearing.
Oydo, ]	Vdito, ]	Auditus, ]	heard.

All verbes whose Infinitives end in ir, o, yr, are declined in euery respect like this: except those in ir and yr, in the Irregulars following.

Of Verbes Passives.

The Spaniards as the Italian and French decline their Verbes passives with their Verbe Sum, fui, and the Participle of the Preter tense, as of Revelar, to reueale; for Revelado, I am reuealed.

The Spanish formeth the Participle Passive of the first and third Coniugation of their Infinitive mode, by taking away r, and putting to do, as of Revelar, Revelado, Pedir, to require, Pedido, required, Oyr, to heare, Oydo, heard.

But in the second Coniugation they take away r as before, and change the last e into y, o, i, and add to do as aforesaid, as Leer, to read, Leydo: Entender, to vnderstand, Entendido.

A Verbe Passive thus declined.

Indicative mode

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
YO SOY, ]	IO SONO, ]	Reuelor, ]	I am Reuealed.
tu eres, ]	tu sei, ]	Reuelaris, &c.	thou art Reuealed.
quel es, ]	colui e, ]		
Plu. ]	Plu. ]		
Sómos, ]	Siámo, ]	Reuelati, ]	We are Reuealed.
soys, ]	seis, ]		
son, ]	sono, ]		
Era, ]	Era, ]	Reuelabar, ]	I was Reuealed.
eras, ]	eri, ]	Reuelaberis, &c.	thou wast reuealed.
era, ]	era, ]		
éramos, ]	erámo, & eranámo, ]	Reueláti, ]	We were Reuealed.
érades, ]	erádes, ]		
éran, ]	éran, ]		
Fui, ]	Fui, ]	Reuelatus sum, ]	I haue bene Reuealed.
fuieste, ]	fui, ]	Reuelatus, &c.	
fue, ]	fui, ]		
fuyamos, ]	fúmo, ]	Reuelati, ]	We haue bene Reuealed.
fuiestes, ]	fúste, ]		
fueron, ]	fúrono, & fueron, ]		
Hé, o, uve, ]	Sido, ]	Sono, ]	I haue bene Reuealed.
as, o, uviste, ]	Sido, Revelado, ]	seí, ]	thou haue bene Reuealed.
a, o, uvo, ]	Sido, ]	e, ]	
Hémos, o, uvimos, ]	Sido, ]	Siámo, ]	We haue bene Reuealed.
avéis, o, uvistes, ]	Sido, Revelados, ]	seis, ]	
an, o, uviéron, ]	Sido, ]	son, ]	

Imperfect.

## Declining of Verbes Passives.

present fec.	Avia Sído, } avias Sído, } avía Sído, }	Reveládo.	E'ra Stato, eri Stato, era Stato,	Riveláto.	Revelatus eram vel fueram, &c.	I had bene Revealed, &c.
	avíamos Sído, avíades Sído, avian Sído,	Reveládos.	eráramos Stati, eráades Stati, erano Stati,	Riveláti.		
future	Seré, serás, será,	Reveládo.	Saré, sarás, sará,	Riveláto.	Revelabor, &c.	I shall or will be Revealed.
	Serémos, seréys, serán,	Reveládos.	Sarémos, saréys, saránno,	Riveláti.		
Imperative mode						
	Sé tu, sea aquél,	Reveládo.	Sia, & sij tu, sia, & sic colui,	Riveláto.	Revelare, Reveletur, &c.	be thou Revea- led, let him be Re- vealed, &c.
	Seámos, sed, seán,	Reveládos.	siámo, siáte, siáno,	Riveláti.		

## Subjunctive mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres. Como	yo Séa tu séas aquel séa	Io Sia tu sij, sia colui sia, se	Rive- lato.	When I am Revealed, &c.
	Seámos seáys seán	siámo siáte siáno & sieno	Cum Rive- lári.	
Imper- fect Como	Fuéra, sería, fuéste fuéras, serías, fuéstes fuérais, sería, fuéste	Fússi, fússi, saréi, saría fústi, fústi, sarésti, saría fúste, fúste, sarébbe, saría.	Rive- lato. Cum Rive- lári.	When I was Revealed, &c.
	Fuéramos, seríamos, fuéssimos fuérades, seríades, fuéssedes fuéran, serían, fuéssen	fússimo, fússimo, sarémmo fúste, fúste, saréste fússero, fússero, sarébbomo. (saríano)	Cum Rive- lári.	
perfect. Como	A'ya Sído áyas Sído áya Sído	Sia Stato sij & sia stato sia & sic stato	Rivelato.	When I have been revealed, &c.
	ayámos Sído ayáys Sído áyan Sído	siámo Stati siáte Stati siáno Stati	Cum Rivelati.	
pluper- fect tēte Como	Uviéra o2 uviéste uviéras o2 uviéstes uviérais o2 uviéste	Sido Reve- lado. Sido	Fússi, fússi, saréi, saría stato fústi, fústi, sarésti, saría stato fúste, fúste, sarébbe, saría stato	When I had been revealed, &c.
	uviéramos o2 uviéssimos sido uviérades o2 uviéssedes sido uviéran o2 uviéssen	Quando Sido Reve- lado. Sido	fússimo, fússimo, sarémmo fúste, fúste, saréste fússero, fússero, sarébbomo (saríano)	Cum Rive- lári.
Futur Como	Fuere o2 uviere o2 avré fuéres o2 uviéres o2 avras sido fuére o2 uviéres o2 avra sido	Reve- lado. Quando	Saré stato sarái stato sará stato	When I shal be Revealed, &c.
	fuéremos o2 uviéremos o2 avrémos sido fuéredes o2 uviéredes o2 avréys sido fuéren o2 uviéren o2 avrán	Reve- lado. Quando	sarémo stati saréte stati saránno stati	Cum Rivelati.

Infinitive

## Declining of Verbes Passive.

## Infinitive mode present tense.

Ser Reveládo.	Rivelari, esse Revelari, Revelari,	to be Revealed, &c.
Avér Sído Reveládo.	Esse Revelari, Revelari, esse Revelari, Revelari,	to be Revealed, &c.
Avér de Ser.	Power esse Revelari, Revelari, esse Revelari, Revelari,	to be Revealed, &c.
Reveládo.	Power ad esse Revelari, Revelari, esse Revelari, Revelari,	to be Revealed, &c.
Lo que es Reveládo.	Rivelari, Revelari, esse Revelari, Revelari,	to be Revealed, &c.
Lo que ha de Ser.	Power ad esse Revelari, Revelari, esse Revelari, Revelari,	to be Revealed, &c.

After this manner in every respect all other Verbes Passives Regular of Irregular of what Conjugation soever are to be declined as of the second Conjugation Soy Vendido, Polido, &c. and of the third Conjugation, as Soy Oído, Corregido, Seguido, and so of the rest.

Note that this Accusative case Se of the 3rd Conjugation top no, which the third person of Verbes Passives make turn have the Passive Conjugation as Dize, be said, &c.

Nota.

Now will I handle and intreat of the Verbes Irregular (in which is found hardness and difficulty to the learner for their declining) in such order and manner that he may with his ease or very little pain decline any of them whatsoever: for which purpose and for whose ease and profit, I have to my great labour brought them into the same as followeth, and have to diligently searched, that no one of them be therein to his use (as I have) shall be wanting, not here following for to be, that my labours may be answerable to my desire, and the learners profit to my paines.

The first Conjugation of Verbes Irregular in AR.  
DAR in Italian and Latin Dire to Owe.1. Conjug.  
of Verbes  
Irregular  
in AR.  
Nota.

The Verbes Irregular like as the Regular divided into three Conjugations, the first in the second in, or the third in, or.

The Verbes Irregular differ from the Regular above going in their first Imperfect of the Indicative, and Preterperfect of the Subjunctive, as by the Examples following you may see.

	Indicative mode.		Subjunctive mode.	
	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres. Como	yo DOY tu DAS aquel DA	Io DO, tu DA, colui DA	Do, Das, Dat, &c.	I DO Give, &c.
	ayamos DOY ayáys DOY áyan DOY	siámo DOY siáte DOY siáno DOY	Do, &c.	
Imper- fec Como	Dava, Davas, Dava	Dávai, Dávai, Dávai	Dabam, &c.	I DAV Give, &c.
	Dávamos, Dávades, Dáván	Dávamo, Dávate, Dávano	Dabam, &c.	
futur Como	Di, Dine, Dio	Diedi & Dei, Dissi, Dido	Di, &c.	I DI Give, &c.
	Dimos, Disies, Dieron	Diamo, Disite, Didero	Di, &c.	

Second

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Second Perfect	yo He tu ás aquel á.	Dádo.	Ho hai ba	Dato.	Dedi, &c. <i>ut supra.</i>	I have Given, &c. as next above.
	hémoss aveys án		habbiámo hauete hámo			
Imperf.	Avia Avias Avia	Dádo.	Hauéua hauéui hauéua	Dato.	Dederam, &c.	I had Given, &c.
	Aviamos Aviades Avian		hauéuámo hauéuáde hauéuámo			
Future.	Daré, Darás, Daré.		Daré, Darás, Daré.		Dabo, &c.	I shall or will Give, &c. *
	Darémos, Daréys, Darán.		Darémo, Daréte, Daránno.			
Imperative mode.						
	Dám, Dé aquel.		Da tu, Da colui.		Da dato, Des dato, &c.	Give thou, &c.
	Démos, Dád, Dén.		Diámo, Daté, Diámo.			

## Subjunctive mode.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
YO De, tu des, aquel De.	IO Dia, tu dia, colui dia,	Dim, &c.	When I doe give, &c.
Imperf. Como	Quando	Cum	
démos, déys, dén,	diémo, diéte, diémo.		
diéna, daría, diéffe, diéras, darías, diéffes, diéra, daría, diéffe,	Quando	Cum	When I did give, &c.
diéramos, daríamos, diéffemos, diérades, dariades, diéffedes, diéran, darían, diéffen.	diéffo, daréti, daría, diéffo, daréti, diéffo, darébbe, darían, diéffo, darébbe, darían, diéffo, darébbe, darían,		
perfect. Como	Dádo.	Dato.	When I have given, &c.
ayá, ayás, ayá,	hábbia, hábbi, hábbia,	Dederim, &c.	
ayámos, ayáys, ayan,	habbiámo, habbiáte, habbiámo.		

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Plus perfect. Como	uviéna, or uviéffe, uviéros, or uviéffes, uviéna, or uviéffe,	Dádo.	Quando hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo,	Dato.	Quando hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo,	When I had given, &c.
	uviéramos, or uviéffemos, uviérades, or uviéffedes, uviéran, or uviéffen.		hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo,		hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo,	
future, Como	diéne, diéres, diéne.	Quando	hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo,	Dato.	Quando hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo,	When I shall give, &c.
	diéremos, diéredes, diéren.		hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo,		hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo, hauéffo,	

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

D'A.R. Daré, Dare, Co give.

## Imperfect tense.

avér Dádo, Dado, Co have given.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

Dando, Dando, Dando, Co give.

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Infinitives.	Pres.	Preterperfects.
Embarcár, to embarke,	yo Embarco,	Embarqué.
Desfegar, to bntie,	yo Desligo,	Desligué.
Embaucár, to cast into a hole,	yo Embauco,	Embauqué.
Embocár, idem,	yo Embóco,	Emboqué.
Desfegar, to recant,	yo Desfiego,	Desfegué.
Enarcár, to chest up,	yo Enarco,	Enarqué.
Divulgar, to publish,	yo divulgo,	Divulgué.
Empegár, to pitch,	yo Empiego,	Empegué.
Fabricár, to frame,	yo Fabrico,	Fabriqué.
Encenegar, to durt,	yo Encienego,	Encenegué.
Fregar, to rub,	yo Friego,	Fregué.
Holgár, to be glad,	yo Huelgo,	Holgué.
Mancár, to want,	yo Manco,	Manqué.
Jugár, to play,	yo Juego,	Jugué.
Marcar, to marke,	yo Marco,	Marqué.
Mercár, to buie,	yo Miérco,	Merqué.
Malcár, to chew,	yo Malco,	Malqué.
Mendigar, to beg,	yo Mendigo,	Mendigué.
Navegar, to saile,	yo Navego,	Navegué.
Otorgár, to graunt,	yo Otorgo,	Otorgué.
Peliscár, to pinch,	yo Pelisco,	Pelígué.
Pagár, to pay,	yo Págo,	Pagué.
Pelcár, to fish,	yo Pelco,	Pelqué.
Plegár, to fold,	yo Pliego,	Pliegué.
Regár, to water,	yo Riego,	Regué.

These here above and their like in all other Tenses varie nothing from the verbes regular in ar afoze going, as Juzgár, to iudge, the Indicative present Tense Juzgo, I iudge, Preterimperfect Juzgava, first Preterperfect Juzgué, the second Perfect He juzgó, the Preterpluperfect avia Juzgado, Future Juzgaré. Imperative Juzga. The Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive Oxala or Si Juzgue, the Preterimperfect Tense Juzgara, juzgaria, juzgasse, Perfect avia juzgado, Pluperfect uviera or uviese Juzgado, Future Juzgaré. Infinitive Juzgar. Participle Juzgado.

## ESTAR

Of Verbes Irregular the first Coniugation in AR, as Estár,] in Italian *Essere*, in Latin *Esse*, To be, to stand.

## Indicative mode.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
<b>Pres.</b>			
YO ESTOY,	IO STO,	Sto, &c.	I stande, or I am, &c.
tu estás,	tu stái,		
aquei está,	colui stái,		
estamos,	stámo,		
estáis,	státe,		
están.	stámo.		
<b>Imperfect.</b>			
estaba,	stáua,	stabam, &c.	I was or did stande, &c.
estabas,	stáui,		
estaba,	stáua,		
estábamos,	stáuamo,		
estabades,	stáuato,		
estaban.	stáuano.		
<b>First Perf.</b>			
estuve,	stetti, & steti,	steti, &c.	I have bene, or have stood, &c.
estuviste,	stetti,		
estuvo,	stette,		
estuvimos,	stémo,		
estuvistes,	stette,		
estuvieron.	stettero.		

second

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

<b>second Preterfect.</b>	yo Hé, tu ás, aquei há,	Estádo.	stámo, státe, stámo.	Stato, &c.	I have bene, or have stood, &c.
<b>Pluperfect.</b>	avia, aviás, avia,	Estádo.	era, éri, era,	Stato, &c.	I had bene, or had stood, &c.
	avíamos, aviades, avian,		erauámo, erauáde, erano,	Stati, &c.	
<b>future.</b>	Estaré, estarás, estará,		staré, starás, stará,	Stabo, &c.	I shall or will stande or be, &c.
	estaremos, estareys, estarán.		starémo, staréde, starámo.		
<b>Imperative mode.</b>	Está, sta, esté, estemos,		stá, stái, stái,	sta, stato, &c.	be thou, or stand thou, &c.
	estád, estén.		stámo, státe, stámo.		

## Subjunctive mode

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
<b>Pres.</b>			
Esté,	Stia,	Stem, &c.	When I am or stand, &c.
Estés,	Stiá,		
Esté,	Stia,		
<b>Como</b>	Quando	Cum	
Estemos,	Stiámo,		
Estéys,	Stiáte,		
Estén.	Stiámo.		
<b>Imperfect.</b>			
Estuviéra, estaria, estuviéste,	Starei, stésti, staría,	Starem, &c.	When I should or was, &c.
Estuviéras, estarias, estuviésses,	Staresti, stésti,		
Estuviéra, estaria, estuviéste,	Starebbe, stéste, staría,		
<b>Como</b>	Quando	Cum	
Estuviéramos, estariamos, estuviésemos,	Starémo, stéssimo,		
Estuviérades, estariades, estuviéssedes,	Staréste, stéste,		
Estuviéran, estarian, estuviéssen.	Starebbono, stariano, stéssero.		
<b>Perfect</b>			
A'ya,	Stia,	Steterim, &c.	When I have stood or bene, &c.
áyas,	Stiá,		
áya,	Stia,		
<b>Como</b>	estádo. Quando	Cum	
Áyamos,	Stiámo,		
Áyáys,	Stiáte,		
áyan,	Stiámo.		

e 2

uviera,



## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

pluper Como	uviéa, o2 uviéfi, uviéras, o2 uviéffes, uviéa, o2 uviéffe,	Estádo. Quando	Foffi, Foffi, Foffe,	Státo.	Cum	Stetiffem &c.	when I had bene, o2 stood, &c
	uviéramos, o2 uviéffemos, uviérades, o2 uviéffedes, uviéran, o2 uviéffen,		Foffimo, Foffe, Foffero.				
first Futur Como	Estuviére, Estuviéres, Estuviére,	Quando	Sará, Sarái, Sarái,	Státo.	Cum	Stetero, &c.	when I shal o2 wil stand o2 be &c.
	Estuviéremos, Estuviéredes, Estuviéren,		Sarémo, Saréte, Sarámo,				
second Futur Como	uviére, o2 avré, uviéres, o2 avrés, uviére, o2 avré,	Estádo.	Sará, Sarái, Sarái,	Státo.	Cum	Stetero, &c.	when I shal o2 wil be o2 stand &c.
	uviéremos, o2 avrémos, uviéredes, o2 avrés, uviéren, o2 avrán,		Sarémo, Saréte, Sarámo,				

## Infinitive mode Present.

Estár, ]	Stare, ]	Stare, ]	to Stand o2 be.
avér Estádo, ]	hauer Státo, ]	Stetiffem, ]	to have stood o2 bene.
avér o2 esperar d'estár, ]	douer Stare, ]	Staturum esse, ]	to Stand hereafter.
Estádo, ]	Stando, ]	Stando, ]	In Standing o2 being.
Estádo, ]	Stato, ]	Stato, ]	Stode o2 bene.

These Verbes following make their Present tense of the Indicative, by changing the last syllable sauc one of the Infinitive the e into ic, and the o into ve, as

Infinitive.	Pres.	Preterperfect.
Assentár, to sit, to set,	yo assiento,	Assenté.
Approvár, to allow,	yo approúeo,	Aprové.
Sentár, to sit,	yo siento,	Senté.
Sonár, to sound,	yo suono,	Soné.
Conservár, to keepe,	yo consérvo,	Confervé.
Atronár, to thunder,	yo atruéo,	Attroné.
Cegár, to make blinde,	yo ciego,	Ciegué.
Contár, to reckon,	yo cuento,	Conté.
Cerrár, to shut, to locke,	yo ciérro,	Cerré.
Degollár, to kill, to behead,	yo deguello,	Degollé.
Enterrár, to put in the earth,	yo entierro,	Enterré.
Derrocár, to throwe downe,	yo deruéo,	derroqué.
Colgár, to hang,	yo cuelgo,	Colgué.
Desterrár, to banish,	yo destierro,	Desterré.
Desollár, to paunch,	yo desuello,	Desollé.
Hollár, to tread on,	yo huélló,	Hollé.
Entesár, to bend,	yo entieío,	Entesé.
Segár, to cut,	yo siego,	Sequé.
Resollár, to breathe,	yo resuello,	Resollé.
Resolgár, idem,	yo resuelgo,	Resolgué.
Temblár, to tremble,	yo tiemblo,	Temblé.
Tentrár, to assaie,	yo tiénto,	Tenté.
Tropeçár, to stumble,	yo tropieço,	Tropeçé.
Adereçár, to make readie,	yo adereço,	Adereçé.

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Of Verbes Irregular of the first Conjugation in AR, as ANDAR, in Italian, *Andare*, in Latin, *Ire*, Gradi, to Goe.

ANDAR

## Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Present.	Ando, andas, anda,	Vo, & Vado, Vai, Va,	Go, &c.	I Goe, thou Goest, &c.
	Andamos, andays, andan.	Andiamo, Andate, Vanno.		
Imperfect.	Andava, Andavas, Andava,	Andava, Andavi, Andava,	Ibam, &c.	I wd Goe, &c.
	Andavamos, Andavades, Andavan.	Andavamo, Andavate, Andavano.		
First Perfect.	Anduve, Anduviste, Anduvo,	Andai, Andasti, Andò,	Iui, &c.	I have Gone, &c.
	Anduvimos, Anduvistes, Anduvieron.	Andammo, Andastite, Andarono.		
Second Perfect.	He, as, a,	Sono, Sii, é,	Andato.	Iui, &c. vt suprà.
	Hémos, avéys, an,	Siámo, Séte, Sono,	Andati.	I have Gone, &c. as beto p.
Imperfect.	Avia, Avias, Avia,	Era, eri, era,	Andato.	Iucram, &c.
	Aviamos, Aviades, Avian,	Eramos, erante, erano.	Andati.	I had Gone, &c.
Future.	Andaré, Andarás, Andará,	Andaré, andrá, Andará, andrá,	Ibo, &c.	I shall o2 will Goe, &c.
	Andarémos, Andaréys, Andarán.	Andarémo, andrémo, Andaréte, Andaréte, Andaránno, andránno.		
Imperative mode				
	Andatu, ándeaquel,	Va te, Vada, o2 vada colui,	Ito, &c.	Goe thou, &c.
	Andémos, Andád, ánden.	Andámo, Andáte, Vádamo, o2 vádino.		

ANDAR.

Of Verbes Irregular the first Coniugation in A.R.

Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como	ánde, ándes, ánde,	Quando vada, vadi, vadu, vadi, vada, vadi,	Cum	Eam, Ec.	When I doe go, &c.
	andémos, andéys, ánden.				
Imper- fect Como	anduviéras, andaria, anduviésse, anduviéras, andarias, anduviésse, anduviéras, andaria, anduviésse,	Quando andessi anderei, anderia, andessi, anderessi, andessi, anderessi, anderia,	Cum	irem, &c.	When I did go, &c.
	Anduviéramos, andariamos, anduviésemos, anduviéramos, andariamos, anduviésemos, anduviéramos, andariamos, anduviésemos,				
perfect Como	áya, áyas, áya, áyamos, áyays, áyan,	Quando sia, sía, sia, siame, siates, siame,	Cum	iuerim, Ec.	When I have gone, &c.
	andado.				
pluper- fect Como	uviéras, o, uviésses, uviéras, o, uviésses, uviéras, o, uviésses, uviéramos, o, uviéssimos, uviéramos, o, uviéssimos, uviéramos, o, uviéssimos,	Quando fuisse, sarei, fuisse, sarei, fuisse, sarei, fuissem, saremmo, fuissem, saremmo, fuissem, saremmo,	Cum	iuissem, Ec.	When I had gone, &c.
	andado.				
Futur Como	anduviére, anduviéres, anduviére, anduviéremos, anduviéredes, anduviéren.	Quando saré, sarái, saré, sarémo, saréte, sarémo,	Cum	iuero, Ec.	When I shall or will goe hereaf- ter, &c.
	andado.				

Infinitive mode Present tense.

ANDAR,] Andare,] Ire,] to goe.

Aver andado,] Effere andato,] Iuisse,] to have gone.

Aver o, esperar de andar,] Effere per andare,] Doyes andare,] Hauer ad andare,] Iurum esse,] to go, or about to go.

Andando,] Andando,] Eundo,] in going.

El que anda,] Andante,] Euni,] one going.

Andado,] Andato,] gone.

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as Traer,  
Sabér, Tener, Poder, Querér, Ponér, Hazér, Cabér.

TRAER

Indicative mode.

Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres.	yo TRAYGO, tutrás, aquel trác,	io APPORTO, tu appórti, colui appórti,	Adduco, &c.	I fetch or bring, &c.	
	traémos, traéys, trácñ.				
Imper-	Traya, trayas, traya,	apportáua, apportáui, apportáui,	Adducebam, Ec.	I did fetch or bring, &c.	
	trayamos, trayades, trayan,				
First Pers.	trúxe, o, tráxe, truxiste, o, traxiste, trúxo, o, tráxo,	apportái, apportáste, apportó,	Adduxi, &c.	I have fetcht or bought, &c.	
	truximos, o, traximos, truxistes, o, traxistes, truxéron, o, traxéron,				
second Pers.	ché, o, tráxe, as, &c. tráyo,	tráui, Ec.	Adduxi, &c.	I have fetcht or brought, &c.	
	traydo.				
Plu- perfect	avía, avías, &c. tráyo.	hauéua, hauéui, Ec.	Adduxeram, Ec.	I had fetcht or bought, &c.	
	traydo.				
Futur	traeré, traerás, traerá, traerémos, traeréys, traerán,	apportaró, apportarái, apportará, apportarémo, apportaréte, apportarán,	Adducam, &c.	I shall or will fetch or bring, &c.	
	traydo.				

1. Present  
 2. Future  
 3. Pluperfect  
 4. Imperative

Imperative mode.

Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Impe- rative mode.	Trácñ, tráyga aquel.	apportá tu, apportá colui,	Adduc, addu- cito.	Bring or fetch thou, &c.	
	traémos, trayámos, traéd, trayán,				

of

of

**TRAER** *Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as TRAER, in Italian Apportare, Arrecare, Trahere, Adducere, Menare, in Latin Adducere, Afferre, Trahere, to fetch, to bring, to Carrie, to Drawe.*

## Subiunctive mode.

## Spanish.

## Italian.

## Latin.

Pres. Como	Quando	Cum	When I doe fetch, or bring, &c.
Tráiga o Tráya, Tráigas o Tráyas, &c. Tráiga, o Tráya,	Apporti, Apporti, Apporti,	Adducam, &c.	
Traygámos, Traygays, Traygan.	Apportiámo, Apportiáte, Apportino.		

*Traxera, in multis  
modis in Imper  
fec. Como*

Quando	Cum	When I did fetch or bring, &c.
Truxéra, Traeria, Truxéffe, Truxéras, Traerías, Truxéffes, Truxéra, Traeria, Truxéffe.	Apportaré o Apportássi, Apportaré o Apportássi, Apportaré o Apportássi.	Adducere, &c.
Truxéramos, Traeríamos, Truxéffemos, Truxérades, Traeríades, Truxéffedes, Truxéran, Traerían, Truxéffen.	Apportarém o Apportássimo, Apportaré o Apportássi, Apportaré o Apportássi.	

*you shall find in some authors Traxéffe, Traxéffes, &c.*

Quando	Cum	When I have fetched or brought, &c.
aya, ayás, aya,	Habbiá, Habbi, Habbiá,	Adduxerim, &c.
ayámos, ayáys, ayán.	Habbiám o Habbiáde, Habbiám o Habbiáde, Habbiám o Habbiáde.	

*ya traeria  
tu traerías  
traxera, in multis  
modis in Imper  
fec. Como*

Quando	Cum	When I had fetched or brought, &c.
uviéra o uviéffe, uviéras o uviéffes, uviéra o uviéffe.	Hauerei o Hauéssi, Hauerei o Hauéssi, Hauerei o Hauéssi.	Adduxissem, &c.
uviéramos o uviéffemos, uviérades o uviéffedes, uviéran o uviéffen.	Hauerém o Hauéssimo, Hauerei o Hauéssi, Hauerei o Hauéssi.	

*Uniré, uniré  
Uniré, uniré  
Uniré, uniré*

Quando	Cum	When I shall bring or fetch, &c.
Truxére, Truxéres, Truxére.	Haueré, Hauerás, Hauerá.	Adduxero, &c.
Truxéremos, Truxéredes, Truxéren.	Hauerém o Haueráde, Hauerém o Haueráde, Hauerém o Haueráde.	

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

TRAER] Apportare]	Adducere,]	to bring, to fetch.
Avér Traydo,]	Hauer Apportato,]	to have brought.
Avér o Esperar de traer,]	Hauer ad Apportare,]	to bring hereafter.

## Gerund.

Trayéndo,]	Apportando,]	Adducendo,]	in bringing or fetching.
El que trae,]	Apportante,]	Adducens,]	one bringing.
Traydo,]	Apportato,]	Adductus,]	brought.
el que ha de traer,]	Donendo Apportare,]	Adducturus,]	about to bring or fetch.

These Verbes following ending in cer, make their Present tense of the Indicative by adding an s before c, thus,

Infinitives.	Pres.	Pref.
Acaecer, to happen,	yo acaécio,	Acaecy.
Acontecer, idem,	yo acontecío,	Acontecy.
Adolecer, to be some or like,	yo adolecío,	Adolecy.
Agradecer, to give thanks,	yo agradécio,	Agradecy.
Amortecer, to swaine,	yo amortécio,	Amortecy.
Desfallecer, idem,	yo desfallecío,	Desfallecy.
Apetecer, to desire,	yo apetéció,	Apetecy.
Crece, to growe,	yo crecío,	Crecy.
Encallecer, to waxe hard as hyawne.	yo encallecío,	Encallecy.
Encarecer, to augment,	yo encarecío,	Encarecy.
Empecer, to hinder,	yo empécio,	Empecy.
Establecer, to establish,	yo establecío,	Establecy.
Fenecer, to finish,	yo fenécio,	Fenecy.
Pacer, to feede,	yo páció,	Pacy.
Perecer, to perish,	yo perécio,	Perecy.

Vencer, to overcome, Except. yo venço, Venci.

In all other modes and Tenses they are declined like the Verbes Regular of the second Coniugation in ER.

These in ger, make their Present of the Indicative by changing g into j, which the Spaniards in waiting do much ble, setting downe the one for the other, as wel in Spounes as in Verbes, as in Spounes Magellad, Majestad; Menfaje, Menfage, and the like.

Infinitives.	Pres.	Pref.
Encoger, to withdraw,	yo encójo,	Encogj.
Recoger, to gather up or retire	yo recójo,	Recogj.
Acoger, to entertaine,	yo acójo,	Acogj.
Efcoger, to choose out,	yo efcójo,	Efcogj.
Coger, to gather,	yo cójo,	Cogj.
Vngir, to annoint,	yo unjo,	Vngj.

In other modes and Tenses like the Regulars.

These make their Present tense of the Indicative by adding i in the last syllable same one of the Infinitive, as

Infinitives.	Pres.	Pref.
Defender, to defend,	yo defiendo,	Defendi.
Dehender, to cleave asunder.	yo dehiendo,	Dehendi.

And these make the Present tense by turning o in the last syllable same one of the Infinitive into ue, as

Infinitives.	Pres.	Pref.
Bolvér, to turne,	yo buélvo,	Bolvi.
Rebolvér, to returne,	yo rebuélvo,	Rebolvi.
Soler, to be wont,	yo suelo,	Soli.
Colér, to sowe,	yo cuélo,	Coli.
Cozer, to seethe,	yo cuézo,	Cozi.
Dolér, to be sozie, to grieve,	yo duélo,	Doli.

And these following thus,

Caér, to fall,	yo caygo,	Cay.
Roér, to gnawe,	yo roygo,	Roy.
Valér, to be worth,	yo váigo,	Vali.
Traér, to fetch or bring,	yo traygo,	Traxe.
Oír, to heare,	yo oygo,	Oy.

In other Modes and Tenses like the Regular Verbes.

In like manner thorow all Modes and Tenses are his Compounds declined, as Retraer, to withdraw, yo Retraygo, I do withdraw, Retrae, I have withdrawn, &c.



**SABER** Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as SABER, in Italian Sapere, Latin Scire, Sapere, to knowe.

Indicative mode				
	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
<i>Pres.</i>	yo SE, tu SÁbes, aquel SÁbe.	Io So, tu Sái, colui Sa.	Scio, Sci, &c.	I knowe, thou knowest.
	Sabémos, Sabéys, Sáben.	Sappiámo, Sapéte, Sámmo.		
<i>Imperf.</i>	Sabía, Sabías, Sabia.	Sapéua, Sapéui, Sapéua.	Sciebam, &c.	I did knowe, &c.
	Sabíamos, Sabiades, Sabian.	Sapeuámo, Sapeuáte, Sapeuámo.		
<i>First Perf.</i>	Súpe, Supiste, Supo.	Séppi, Sappésti, Séppe.	Scini, &c.	I haue knowen, &c.
	Supimos, Supistes, Supieron.	Sappémmo, Sappéste, Séppero.		
<i>second perfect.</i>	He o haia as o haia a	Ho Hai Ha	Scini, &c. & mste.	I haue knowen, &c. as above.
	Sabido.	Habbiámo Hauéte Hámmo	Saputo.	
<i>Imperf. fut.</i>	Avia Avías Avia	Hauéua Hauéui Hauéua	Scietam, &c.	I had knowen, &c.
	Aviamos Avíades Avian	Hauéuámo Hauéuáte Hauéuámo	Saputo.	
<i>Futur.</i>	Sabré, Sabrás, Sabrá.	Soppró, Sapprái, Sapprá.	Sciam, &c.	I shal or will knowe &c.
	Sabrémós, Sabréys, Sabrán.	Sapprémo, Sappréte, Sappránno.		

## Imperative mode

Sábe tu, Sépa aquel.	Sappitu, Sappia colui.	Sci, Scito, &c.	I know thou, &c.
Sepámos, Sabéd, Sépan.	Sappiámo, Sappiáte, Sappiámo.		

Declining

## Declining of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as SABER.

SABER.

## Subiunctive mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
<i>Pres.</i>	SE' P A, Sépas, Sépa.	SAPP I A, Sappi, Sappia.	Sciam, &c.	when I doe knowe, &c.
<i>Como</i>	Sepámos, Sepáys, Sepáu.	Sappiámo, Sappiáte, Sappiámo.	Cum	
<i>Imperf.</i>	Supiera, fabria, supiéste.	Saprei, sapésti, Saprésti, sapésti, Saprébbe, sapéste.	Scirem, &c.	when I did knowe, &c.
<i>Como</i>	Supiéramos, fabriamos, supiésemos, Supiérades, fabriades, supiéredes, Supiéran, fabrian, supiéssen.	Saprémó, sapéssimo, Sapréste, sapéste, Saprébbero, sapéssero.	Cum	
<i>Perf.</i>	A'ya, áyas, áya.	Hábbia, Hábbi, Hábbia.	Scierim, &c.	when I haue knowen, &c.
<i>Como</i>	Ayámos, ayáys, ayán.	Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Hábbiamo.	Saputo.	
<i>Imperf. fut.</i>	Uviéra, ozi uviéste, uviéras, ozi uviéste, uviéran, ozi uviésses.	Hauerei, hauésti, Hauerésti, hauésti, Hauerébbe, hauéste, Hauerémo, hauéssimo, Haueréte, hauéste, Hauerébbero, hauéssero.	Cum	when I had knowen, &c.
<i>Como</i>	uviéramos, ozi uviésemos, uviérades, ozi uviéredes, uviéran, ozi uviéssen.	Hauerémo, hauéssimo, Haueréte, hauéste, Hauerébbero, hauéssero.	Saputo.	
<i>First Future</i>	Supiere, Supieres, Supiere.	Hauero, Haueraí, Haueraí.	Sciuero, &c.	when I shal knowe, &c.
<i>Como</i>	Supiéremos, Supiéredes, Supiéren.	Hauerémo, Haueréte, haueránno.	Saputo.	
<i>Second Future</i>	Uviére, ozi avré, uviéres, ozi avrás, uviére, ozi avrá, uviéremos, ozi avrémos, uviéredes, ozi avréys, uviéren, ozi aurán.	Haueró, Haueráí, Haueráí.	Cum	when I shall knowe, &c.
<i>Como</i>	uviéramos, ozi avrémos, uviéredes, ozi avréys, uviéren, ozi aurán.	Hauerémo, Haueréte, haueránno.	Sciuero, &c. & antea.	

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

SABER ]	Sapere, ]	Scire, ]	to knowe.
avér Sabido, ]	hauer Saputo, ]	Sciuisse, ]	to haue knowen.
avér ozi ef- perár de Sabér, ]	Doner sapere, Scitum esse, ]		to knowe hereafter.

Gerund.

### Declining of Verbes Irregular.

**SABER** *Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as SABER, in Italian Sapere, Latin Scire, Sapere, to knowe.*

(are the <sup>apine</sup> bene sapient.)

Indicative mode				
	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	yo SE, tu SÁbes, aquel Sábe.	Io So, tu Sái, colui Sa.	Scio, Scis, &c.	I knowe, thou knowest.
	Sabémos, Sabéys, Sabén.	Sappiámo, Sappéte, Sáanno.		
Imper- fect.	Sabía, Sabías, Sabia.	Sapéna, Sapéni, Sapéna.	Sciebam, &c.	I did knowe, &c.
	Sabíamos, Sabíades, Sabían.	Sapeuámo, Sapeuáte, Sapéuano.		
First Perf.	Súpe, Supiste, Supo.	Séppi, Sappésti, Seppe.	Scini, &c.	I have knowen, &c.
	Supímos, Supístes, Supiéron.	Sappémmo, Sappéste, Seppero.		
second perfect.	He o <i>thue</i> a <i>o thue</i> a	Ho Hai Ha	Scini, &c. <i>o aut.</i>	I have knowen, &c. as above.
	Hémos aveys án	Habbiámo Hauéte Hánno		
Imper- fect.	Avía Avías Avia	Hauéna Hauéni Hauéna	Sciueram, &c.	I had knowen, &c.
	Avíamos Aviades Avían	Hauenuamo Hauenuate Hauénano		
Futur.	Sabré, Sabrás, Sabrá.	Sopprá, Sappráti, Sapprá.	Sciám, &c.	I shall or will knowe &c.
	Sabrémos, Sabréys, Sabrán.	Sapprémo, Sappréte, Sappránno.		

20. Ec o krigor. Sabreys,  
 Van as o tiens } lesabir } 2. future  
 Sabrán.

### Imperative mode

Sábe tu, Sepa aquel.	<i>Sappiso, Sappia colui.</i>	<i>Sci, Scito, &amp;c.</i>	Know thou, &c.
Sepámos, Sabéd, Sépan.	<i>Sappiámo, Sappiáte, Sappiano.</i>		

*Declining*

*Declining of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as S A B E R.*

**SABER.**

Subjunctive mode		Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.		When I do know, &c.	
Pres. Como	Sepas, Sepa,	Quando	Sappi, Sappia,	Sappiámo, Sappiáte, Sappiano.	Cum	Sciam, &c.	When I do know, &c.		
Imperfec. Como	Supiera, fabria, supiéste. Supieras, fabrias, supiésses, Supiera, fabria, supiéste,	Quando	Saprei, sapéssi, Saprésti, sapéssi, Saprébbe, sapéssi,	Saprémo, sapéssimo, Sapréste, sapéste, Saprébbero, sapéssero.	Cum	Scirem, &c.	When I did know, &c.		
Perfect. Como	Ayá, ayas, aya,	Sabido.	Hábbia, Hábbi, Hábbia,	Saputo.	Cum	Sciuerim, &c.	When I have known, &c.		
Imperfec. Como	Ayámos, ayáys, ayán,	Sabido.	Hábbiámo, Hábbiáte, Hábbiamo,	Saputo.	Cum	Sciuissem, &c.	When I had known, &c.		
First Future Como	Supiére, Supiéres, Supiére, Supiéremos, Supiéredes, Supiéren.	Quando	Hauero, Hauerá, Hauerá,	Saputo.	Cum	Sciuro, &c.	When I shall know, &c.		
Second Future Como	Uviére, o, avré, uviéros, o, avrás, uviére, o, avrá, uviéremos, o, avrémos, uviéredes, o, avréys, uviéren, o, aurán.	Sabido.	Hauerémo, Haueréte, haueránno,	Saputo.	Cum	Sciuro, &c. et antea.	When I shall know, &c.		

**Infinitive mood Present tense.**

SABÈ'R. ]	Sapère, ]	Scire, ]	to know.
	Dzetrpexet tenf.		
avér Sabido, ]	haver Sapúto, ]	Sciniffé, ]	to have known.
	Future tenf.		
avér oz ef- Douer Sapère, }			
Estar peráz de Haver a Sapère, }	Scitutum esse, ]		
Sabér. Effere per Sapère, }			to know hereafter.

Gerund.

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Sabiendo, ]	<i>Sciendo.</i>	<i>Sciendo,</i> ]	In knowing.
elque Sabe, ]	Participle of the Present, and Future.	<i>Sciens,</i> ]	one knowing.
Sabido, ]	Participle of the Preter tense and Passive.	<i>Saputo,</i> ]	known.

## Declining of Verbes Irregular of the second Conjugation in ER, as TENER, TENER.

In Italian, and Latin, Tenere, to Hold.

## Indicative mode

<b>Present.</b>	YO TENGO, tu TIENES, aquel TIENE,  Tenemos, Tenéis, Tienen,	IO T'ENGO, tu TIENI, colui TIENE,  Teniamo, Tenete, Tengono.	<i>Teneo, &amp;c.</i>	I do hold, &c.
<b>Imperfect.</b>	Tenia, Tenías, Tenia,  Teníamos, Teníades, Tenían.	Teneña, & teneña, Teneñi, Teneña, & teneña,  Tenéñamo, Tenéñades, Tenéñano.	<i>Tenebam, &amp;c.</i>	I did hold, &c.
<b>First Perfect.</b>	Tuve, Tuviste, Tuvo,  Tuvimos, Tuvistes, Tuvieron.	Tenni, Tenésti, Tenne,  Tennémmo, Tenéste, Ténnero.	<i>Tenni, &amp;c.</i>	I have held, &c.
<b>Second Perfect.</b>	Yo He, Tu as, aquel á,  Hémos, avéis, án,	Ho, Hai, Ha,  Habbiamo, Havéte, Hánno.	<i>Tenni, &amp;c.</i>	I have held, &c. as next above.
<b>Pluperfect.</b>	Avia, Avias, Avia,  Avíamos, Avíades, Avían.	Hauéua, Hauéui, Hauéua,  Hauéuámo, Hauéuáde, Hauéuáno.	<i>Tenueram, &amp;c.</i>	I had held, &c.
<b>Future.</b>	Tendré, & Terné, Tendrás, & Ternás, Tendrá, & Terná,  Tendremos, & Ternémos, Tendréys, & Ternéys, Tendrán, & Ternán,	Tenneró, & Terró, Tennerás, & Terrás, Tenerá, & Terra,  Tenerémo, & Terrémo, Teneréte, & Terréte, Teneránno, & Terránno,	<i>Tenebo, &amp;c.</i>	I shall or will hold, &c.

Imperative

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

## Imperative mode

Tén tu, Ténga aquel,	<i>Tieni tu, Ténga colui,</i>	<i>Tene tu, &amp;c.</i>	Hold thou, &c.
Tengámos, Tenéd, Tengan.	<i>Teniámo, Tenéte, Téngano.</i>		

## Subjunctive mode.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como	Tenga, Téngas, Ténga,  Tengámos, Tengáis, Tengan.	Quando	Tenga, Tenghi, Tenga,  Teniamo, Teniate, Tengano.	Cum	Teneam, &c.	When I do hold, &c.
Imper fec. Como	Tuviéra, ternia, tuviéste, Tuvieras, ternias, tuviéste, Tuviéra, ternia, tuviéste.  Tuvieramos, terniamos, tuviésemos, Tuvierades, terniades, tuviésedes, Tuvieran, ternian, tuviéssen.	Quando	Tenésse, teneréi, teneria, Tenésse, tenerésti, Tenésse, tenerébbe, teneria,  Tenéssimo, tenerémmo, Tenésse, teneréste, Tenésse, tenerébbno.	Cum	Tenerem, &c.	When I did hold, &c.
perfect. Como	aya, ayas, aya,  ayámos, ayáis, ayan,	Quando	Habbia, Habbí, Habbia,  Habbiamo, Habbiate, Habbiano,	Cum	Tenerim, &c.	When I have holden, &c.
pluper fec. Como	uviéra o: uviéste, uviéras o: uviéste, uviéra o: uviéste,  uviéramos o: uviésemos, uviérades o: uviésedes, uviéran o: uviéssen,	Tenido.	Hauerei o: Hauéssi, Hauerésti o: Hauéssi, Hauerébbe o: Hauéssi,  Hauerémmo o: Hauéssimo, Haueréste o: Hauéste, Hauerébbno o: Hauéssero	Tenú- to.	Cum Tenuissem, &c.	When I had holden, &c.
first Futur. Como	Tuviére, Tuvieres, Tuviére,  Tuvieremos, Tuvieredes, Tuvieren.			Cum	Tenuero, &c.	When I shall o: will hold, &c.
Secd Futur. Como	uviére o: avré, uviéres o: avrás, uviére o: avrá,  uviéremos o: avrémos, uviéredes o: avréys, uviéren o: avrán,	Tenido.	Haueró Hauerás Hauerá  Hauerémo Haueréte Hauerámo	Tenúto.	Tenuero, &c. ut ante.	When I shall o: will hold, &c. as next above.

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

TENER, ]	<i>Tenere,</i> ]	to hold.
Aver Tenido, ]	<i>Haver Tenúto,</i> ]	to have holden.

## Interperfect tense.

f i

future

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

*Futura tense.*  
 AVer de Tenér, { *Dauer tenère,*  
*Hauer a tenère,* } *Tenurum esse,* } to hold hereafter.  
*Effere per tenère,*

*Gerund.*  
 Teniendo, } *Tenendo,* } *Tenendo,* } In holding.  
*Participle of the Present and Active.*  
 El que tiene, } *Tenente,* } *Tenens,* } one holding.  
*Participle of the Preter and Passive.*  
 Tenido, } *Tenito,* } *Tenim,* } *Holden.*

Like this verbe simple are his Compounds in all points declined thowow all Modes and Tenses, as Manténér, to maintaine, yo Manténgo, Mantúve. Detenér, to detainé of stay, yo Detén-go, Detúve. Retenér, to withhold of retaine, yo Retén-go, Retúve. Sosténér, to sustaine of uphold, yo Sostén-go, Sultúve.

## PODER

*The second Coniugation of Verbes Irregular in ER, as PODER,*  
*in Italian Potere, in Latin Possé, to be able.*

## Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	yo PUEDO, tu Puedes, aquel Puede.	POSO, Puo, Puo.	Possim, &c.	I can oz am able, &c.
	Podemos, Podéis, Pueden.	Possimo, Potete, Possano & Pónno.		
Imperf.	Podia, Podias, Podia.	Potua oz Potía, Potui, Potua oz Potía.	Poteram, &c.	I was able, &c.
	Podíamos, Podíades, Podían.	Potuíamo, Potuíades, Potuían.		
First per- fect.	Pude, Pudiste, Pudo.	Potei, Potisti, Pote.	Potui, &c.	I could oz have been able, &c.
	Pudimos, Pudistes, Pudieron.	Potuímo, Potuíste, Potuíeron & Pótero.		
Second perfect.	He as a	Ho Hai Ha	Potui, &c. vi supra.	I could oz have been able, &c. as next above.
	Hémos avéys an	Habbiámo Hauíte Hanno	Potuíto.	
Pluperf.	Avia Avias Avia	Hauía Hauíno Hauía	Potuíram, &c.	I had been able, &c.
	Avíamos Avíades Avían	Hauíuíamo Hauíuíades Hauíuían	Potuíto.	
Future.	Podré, Podrás, Podrá.	Potró, Potrás, Potrá.	Potero, &c.	I shall oz will be able, &c.
	Podrémos, Podréys, Podrán.	Potrémo, Potréste, Potránno.		

*Imperative mode wanteth as in the Latin.*

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

## PODER

*Of Verbes Irregular, the second Coniugation in ER, as PODER.*

## Subjunctive mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres. Como	Pueda, puedas, pueda.	Possa, possis, possa.	Possim, &c.	When I can oz be able, &c.
	puedámos, <i>podámos</i> podáis, puedan.	possámo, & potámo, possáte, & potáte, possano.	Cum	
Imper- fect.	Pudiera, podría, pudiéssé, pudieras, podrias, pudiésses, pudiera, podría, pudiéssé.	potéssi, potréti, potría, potéssi, potréssi, potéssi, potrébbe, potría.	Possém, &c.	When I could oz might be able, &c.
	pudiéramos, podriámos, pudiéssémos, pudiérades, podriades, pudiéssedes, pudiéran, podrian, pudiéssen.	potéssimo, potrémmo, potéssite, potréssite, potéssero, potrébbono, potríano.	Cum	
Perf. Como	áya, áyas, áya.	habbia, habbi, habbia.	Potuerim, &c.	When I have been able, &c.
	áyamos, áyays, áyan.	habbiámo, habbiáte, habbiano.	Cum	
Plus- perfect.	uviéa, oz uviéssé, uviéa, oz uviésses, uviéa, oz uviéssé.	hauéssi, haueréti, hauéssi, haueréssi, hauéssi, hauerébbe.	Potuíssim, &c.	When I had been able, &c.
	uviéramos, oz uviéssémos uviérades, oz uviéssedes, uviéran, oz uviéssen.	hauéssimo, hauerémo, hauéssite, haueréssite, hauéssero, hauerébbono.	Potuíto	
First future. Como	Pudiére, pudiéres, pudiére.		Cum Potuero, &c.	When I shall be able hereaf- ter, &c.
	pudiéremos, pudiéredes, pudiéren.			
Second Futur. Como	uviére, oz avré uviéres, oz avrás, uviére, oz avrá.	Quando hauerá, hauerái, hauerá.	Cum Potuero, &c. vi ante.	When I shall oz will be able here after, &c. as next as bove.
	uviéremos, oz avrémos, uviéredes, oz avréys, uviéren, oz avrán.	hauerémo, haueréte, haueránno.	Potuíto.	

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

Podér, } Potére, } Possé, } To be able.  
 Avér podido, } Hauer podido, } Potuíssé, } To have been able.  
 Pudiendo, } Poténdo, } In being able.  
 Podido, } Potuíto, } Able.



PONER. *Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as PONER, in Italian, Ponere, Porre, Mettere, in Latin, Ponere, Locare, to Put, to place.*

## Indicative mode

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
<b>YO PONGO,</b> tu Pones, aquél Pone, <b>Pres.</b>	<b>IO PONGO,</b> tu Poni, colui Pone, <b>Pres.</b>	<b>Pono, &amp;c.</b>	<b>I doe put, &amp;c.</b>
Ponémós, Ponéis, Ponen.	Poniamo, Ponete, Pongono,		
<b>Ponia,</b> Ponias, Ponia, <b>Imperfect</b>	<b>Poneua,</b> Poneui, Poneua,	<b>Ponebam,</b> &c.	<b>I did put, &amp;c.</b>
Poniamos, Poníades, Ponían.	Poneuámo, Poneuáde, Poneuáno.		
<b>Púse,</b> Pusiste, Púo, <b>First Perfect</b>	<b>Pósi,</b> Ponisti, Póse,	<b>Posui, &amp;c.</b>	<b>I haue put, &amp;c.</b>
Pusimos, Pusistes, Pusieron.	Ponémmo, Ponístes, Pósero.		
<b>He,</b> <i>El Uno</i> as, <i>El Uno</i> a, <b>Second Perfect</b>	<b>Ho,</b> Hai, Ha,	<b>Posui, &amp;c.</b>	<b>I haue put, &amp;c.</b>
Avémós, y hémos, Avéys, an,	Habbiámo, Hauéte, Hánno,		
<b>Avia,</b> Avias, Avia, <b>Pluperfect</b>	<b>Hauéua,</b> Hauéui, Hauéua,	<b>Posueram,</b> &c.	<b>I had put, &amp;c.</b>
Avíamos, Avíades, Avían,	Hauéuámo, Hauéuáde, Hauéuáno,		
<b>Poné,</b> o Pondré, Ponás, o Pondrás, Poná, o Pondrá, <b>Future</b>	<b>Poneré,</b> & Porré, Ponerá, & Porrá, Ponerá, & Porrá,	<b>Ponam, &amp;c.</b>	<b>I shal or will put, &amp;c.</b>
Ponémós, o Pondrémos, Ponéys, o Pondréys, Ponán, o Pondrán,	Ponerémó, & Porrémó, Poneréte, & Porréte, Poneránmo, & Poránno,		

## Imperative mode.

<b>Pón tu,</b> Póngá aquél, <b>Pongámos,</b> Ponéd, Póngan.	<b>Pone tu,</b> Póngá colui, <b>Poniamo,</b> Ponéte, Póngano.	<b>Pone, Poneto,</b> Ponát, Poneto, &c.	<b>put thou,</b> put he or let him put, &c.
---	---	--	---

*Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as PONER.* **PONER**

## Subjunctive mode.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
<b>Ponga,</b> Póngas, Ponga. <b>Pres.</b>	<b>Ponga,</b> Póngas, Ponga.	<b>Ponam, &amp;c.</b>	<b>When I do put, &amp;c.</b>
<b>Pongámos,</b> Pongáys, Pongan. <b>Como</b>	<b>Poniamo,</b> Poniate, Ponganó.	<b>Cum</b>	
<b>Pusiera,</b> o pondria, pusiesse, Pusieras, o pondrias, pusiesse, Pusiera, o pondria, pusiesse. <b>Imperfect</b>	<b>Ponessi,</b> o Poneré, Ponessi, o Poneréti, Ponessi, o Ponerétti.	<b>Ponerem, &amp;c.</b>	<b>When I did put, &amp;c.</b>
<b>Pusiéramos,</b> o pondriámos, pusiéramos, Pusiéades, o pondriades, pusiéades, Pusiéran, o pondrian, pusiéran. <b>Como</b>	<b>Ponéssimo,</b> o Ponerémmo, Ponéssite, o Poneréssite, Ponéssero, o Poneréssero.	<b>Cum</b>	
<b>aya</b> ayas aya <b>Pres.</b>	<b>Habbia</b> Habbí Habbia	<b>Posuerim, &amp;c.</b>	<b>When I haue put, &amp;c.</b>
<b>ayámos</b> ayáis ayan <b>Como</b>	<b>Habbiámo</b> Habbiáte Habbiáno	<b>Cum</b>	
<b>uviéra</b> o uviésse uviéras o uviésses uviéra o uviésses <b>Imperfect</b>	<b>Haueré</b> o Haueréss Haueréssite o Haueréssite Haueréssite o Haueréssite	<b>Cum</b>	<b>When I had put, &amp;c.</b>
<b>uviéramos</b> o uviéssémos uviéredes o uviéssedes uviéran o uviéssén <b>Como</b>	<b>Hauerémmo</b> o Haueréssimo Haueréssite o Haueréssite Haueréssite o Haueréssite	<b>Cum</b>	
<b>Pusiére,</b> Pusiéres, Pusiére. <b>First Futur</b>		<b>Posuero, &amp;c.</b>	<b>When I shall or will put, &amp;c.</b>
<b>Pusiéremos,</b> Pusiéredes, Pusiéren. <b>Como</b>		<b>Cum</b>	
<b>Uviére</b> o avré uviéres o avrás uviére o avrá <b>Second Futur</b>	<b>Haueré</b> Hauerá Haterá	<b>Posuero, &amp;c.</b>	<b>When I shall or will put, &amp;c.</b>
<b>uviéremos</b> o avrémos uviéredes o avréys uviéren o avrán, <b>Como</b>	<b>Hauerémo</b> Haueréte Haueránno	<b>Cum</b>	

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

<b>PONER,</b> ] <i>Ponere, Mettere, Porre,</i> ] <b>PONER,</b> ] <b>to Put.</b>	
<b>Aver Puesto,</b> ] <i>Hauer Puesto,</i> ] <b>Posuisse,</b> ] <b>to haue put.</b>	
<b>Ponendo,</b> ] <i>Ponendo,</i> ] <b>Ponendo,</b> ] <b>In Putting.</b>	
<b>Puesto,</b> ] <i>Puesto,</i> ] <b>Positus,</b> ] <b>Put.</b>	

After this manner are declined in all points Componér, to compose, yo Compóngo, I doe compose, yo Compúse, I haue composed, &c. Also Disponér, to dispose, yo Dispongo, I dispose, Dispúse, I haue disposed. And Anteponér, to put before, yo Antepongo, I doe put before, Antepúse, I haue put before. So Propónér, to set out, to allege, yo Propóngo, Propúse.

HAZER.

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as HAZER,  
in Italian Fare, in Latin Facere, to doe, to make.

## Indicative mode.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
<b>Pres.</b>	yo HA'GO, tu HÁZES, aquel HÁZE.	Facio, &c.	I doe make or doe, &c.
	Hazémos, Hazéis, Házen.	Faciamus, Facitis, Faciunt.	
<b>Imperf.</b>	Hazía, Hazías, Hazía.	Faciebam, &c.	I did make or doe, &c.
	Hazíamos, Hazíades, Hazían.	Faciebamus, Faciebatis, Faciebant.	
<b>First per- fect.</b>	Hize, Hiziste, Hizo.	Feci, &c.	I have made or done, &c.
	Hizimos, Hizistes, Hizieron.	Fecimus, Fecistis, Fecerunt.	
<b>Second Perfect.</b>	He o <i>hizo</i> <i>cuando</i> as o <i>hizo</i> <i>cuando</i> a	Feci, &c. vi ante.	I have made or done, &c.
	Hémos avéys an	Habíamos Hauéte Hánno	Fáto.
<b>Imper- fect.</b>	Avía Avías Avía	Hauéua Hauéui Hauéua	Fáto.
	Avíamos Avíades Avían	Hauéuámo Hauéuáde Hauéuáno	
<b>Future.</b>	Haré, Harás, Hará.	Faciam, &c.	I shall or will make or doe, &c.
	Harémos, Haréys, Harán.	Faciémo, Facéte, Faciéno.	

## Imperative mode.

Ház tu, Hága aquel.	Fa tu, Faccia colui.	Fac, Facite, &c.	Doe thou, or make thou, &c.
Hagámos, Hazéd, Hágan.	Faciémo, Facéte, Faciéno.		

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as HAZER.

HAZER

## Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
<b>Pres.</b>	Hága, hagas, haga.	faciam, &c.	when I doe make or doe, &c.
<b>Como</b>	hagámos, hagáys, hagan.	faciamus, faciatis, faciant.	
<b>Imperf.</b>	hiziera, haria, hiziéste, hizieras, harias, hiziésses, hiziera, haria, hiziéste.	facerem, &c.	when I did do or make, &c.
<b>Como</b>	hizierámos, haríamos, hiziéssémos, hizierádes, haríades, hiziéssedes, hizieran, harían, hiziéssen.	faceremus, faceretis, facerent.	
<b>Pres.</b>	aya, ayás, aya.	hábba, hábbi, hábba.	when I have made or done, &c.
<b>Como</b>	ayámos, ayáys, ayan.	habbíamos, habbíades, habbían.	
<b>Imperf.</b>	uviéa, or uviéste, uviéas, or uviésses, uviéa, or uviéste.	hauerem, &c.	when I had made or done, &c.
<b>Como</b>	uviérámos, or uviéssémos, uviérádes, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen.	haueremus, haueretis, hauerent.	
<b>First future.</b>	hiziére, hiziéres, hiziére.	Faceré, &c.	when I shall or will make or do, &c.
<b>Como</b>	hiziéremos, hiziéredes, hiziéren.	Facerémo, Facerédes, Facerén.	
<b>Second future.</b>	uviére, or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá.	Faceré, &c.	when I shall or will make or do, &c.
<b>Como</b>	uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avrédes, uviéren, or avrán.	Facerémo, Facerédes, Facerén.	

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

Hazer,] Fare,] Facere, To do, to make.

Interperfect tense.

Aver hecho,] Hauer fatto,] Fecisse,] To have made or done, &amp;c.

Future tense.

Aver or esperar de hazer,] Doner fare,] Effer per fare,] Facitum esse,] To make or do hereafter.

Estar

Gerund.

Haziendo] Facendo,] Faciendo,] In doing or making, &amp;c.

Supine

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Supine of the Active voice.  
 A Hazér,] *Disfare,*] *Factum,*] To make or do.  
 Supine of the Passive voice.  
 De sér hécho,] *Disser factu,*] *Factu,*] To be made or don.  
 Participle of the Active and Present tense.  
 El que háze,] *Faciente,*] *Faciens,*] One doing or making.  
 Participle of the Passive and Pictet tense.  
 Hécho] *Fatto,*] *Factus,*] Made or done, &c.  
 Participle of the Future tense.  
 El que ha, or Espéra de hazér,] *Faendo a fare,*] *Facturus,*] About to do, &c.  
*Essendo per fare,*]

CABER

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as CABER,  
 in Italian *Capere,*] Latin *Continere & Contineri,*]  
 To containe, or to be contained.

## Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	Yo QUEPO, tu cábes, aquél cábe,  cabémos, cabéys, cáben.	Io CAPISCO, tu capisci, colui capisce,  capiamo, capite, capiscono,	Ego contineo, tu contineres, &c. Ego contineris, tu contineris, &c.	Thou containest, &c. Thou art contained, &c.
Imper. fec.	cabía, cabias, cabía,  cabíamos, cabíades, cabían.	capia, capui, capia,  capuimus, capuistis, capuimus.	continebam, &c. continebar, &c.	I did containe, &c. I was contained, &c.
First Pres.	cúpe, cupiste, cúpo,  cupimos, cupistis, cupieron.	capo, or capui, capisti, capé,  capimus, capistis, caperunt,	continui, &c. contentus sum vel fui, &c.	I have contained, &c. I have been contained, &c.
second Pres.	he as a avémos avéys an	Ho, Hai, Ha,  Habbiám, Hauéte, Hámo,	continui, &c. contentus sum vel fui, &c.	I have contained, &c. I have been contained, &c.
Plus-perfect.	avía avías avía  avíamos, aviades avian	Hauéua, Hauéui, Hauéua,  Hauéuám, Hauéuáte, Hauéuano,	continueram, &c. contentus eram vel fu- eram, &c.	I had contained, &c. I had been contained, &c.
Futur	cabré, cabrás, cabrá,  cabrémos, cabréys, cabrán.	caperé, capirái, capirá,  capirémo, capiréte, capiránno.	continebo, &c. continebor, &c.	I shall or will containe, &c. I shall or will be contained, &c.

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as CABER.

CABER.

## Subiunctive mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres. Como	Quépa, Quépas, Quépa,  Quépámos, Quépáys, Quépan.	Quangá Capisca, Capisci, Capisca,  Capiámo, Capiáte, Capiscamo.	Cum Contineam, &c. Continear, &c.	When I doc containe, &c. When I am contained, &c.
	Imper fec. Como	Cupiéra, cabría, cupiéste, Cupiéras, cabrias, cupiéstes, Cupiéra, cabria, cupiéste,  Cupiérámos, cabriámos, cupiésemos, Cupiérades, cabriades, cupiéstedes, Cupiéran, cabrian, cupiéssen.	Quando Capissi, caperis, caperia, Capisti, caperisti, Capisse, capirébbe, caperia, Cum Capissimo, capirémmo, Capistis, capiréste, Capissero, capirébono, ca- pirano.	Cum Continerem, &c. Continerer &c.
Perfec. Como		A'ya, áyas, áya,  Ayámos, ayáys, áyán,	Cabido.  Habbiá, Habbi, Habbiá,  Habbiám, Habbiáte, Habbiáno.	Cum Contingim, &c. Contentus sim, &c..
	plusper fec. Como	Uviéra, or uviéste, uviéras, or uviéstes, uviéra, or uviéste,  uviérámos, or uviésemos, uviérades, or uviéstedes, uviéran, or uviéssen,	Cabido.  Hauéssi, & haueréi, Hauésti, & hauerésti, Hauéssi, & hauerébbe,  Hauéssimo, & hauerémmo Hauéste, & haueréste, Hauéssero, & hauerébono	Cum Contingissim, &c. Conten- tus essim &c.
Futur Como		Cupiére, Cupiéres, Cupiére,  Cupiéremos, Cupiéredes, Cupiéren.	Cum Continuero &c. Contentus ero, &c.	Cum Continuero &c. Contentus ero, &c.

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

CABER, ]	Capere, ]	Continere, ] to containe, &c. Contineri, ] to be contained, &c. Pictet perfect tense.
avér Cabido, ]	hauer capito, ]	Continuisse, ] to have contained, &c. Contentum Esse vel fuisse, ] to have been contained, &c.
Cabiéndo, ]	Capendo, ]	Continendo, ] In containing, &c. Continens, ] being contained, &c.
Cabido, ]	Capito, ]	Participle. Contentus, ] contained.

of



VER.

*Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as VER, in Italian  
Vedere, Latin Videre, to ſee.*

Indicative mode.		Vedere, Latin Videre, to See.	
	<p><b>Spanish.</b></p> <p><b>Yo</b> VEO, tu Vés, aqué Véc,   <b>Vémos,</b> Véys, Véén.</p>	<p><b>Italian,</b></p> <p><b>Io</b> Vêdo &amp; VEGGIO, tu Vêdi, colui Vêde,   Vediám, &amp; Veggíám, Vedéte, Vidém, &amp; Vêggono.</p>	<p><b>Latin.</b></p> <p>Videó, &amp;c.</p> <p><b>I</b> doe sê, &amp;c.</p>
<b>Imper. fec.</b>	<p><b>Via,</b> Vias, Via.   <b>Viamos,</b> Viadcs, Vian.</p>	<p>Vediám, &amp; Vedia, Vediui, Vediua, &amp; Vedia.   Vedeuamo, Vedeuâte, Vedéuano, &amp; Vedéano.</p>	<p>Videbam, &amp;c.</p> <p><b>I</b> did sê, &amp;c.</p>
<b>First perfect.</b>	<p><b>Vi</b> ôz Vide, Viste, ôz Viste, Vió, ôz Vido,   <b>Vímos,</b> Vists, Viéron.</p>	<p>Vidi, ôz Vidi, Vedisti, Vidde.   Vidémmo, Vidistî, Viddero.</p>	<p>Vidi, &amp;c.</p> <p><b>I</b> haue sene, &amp;c.</p>
<b>Second perfect.</b>	<p><b>He</b> as a   <b>Hémos</b> avéys an</p>	<p><b>Ho</b> Hai, Ha,   <b>Habbiám</b> Hauête, Hánno</p>	<p>Vidi, &amp;c.</p> <p><b>I</b> haue sene, &amp;c.</p>
<b>Pluperfect.</b>	<p><b>Avia</b> Avias Avia.   <b>Avíamos</b> Aviades Avian</p>	<p><b>Hauéua</b> Hauéui, Hauéua,   <b>Hauéuám</b> Hauéuâte Hauéuano</p>	<p>Videram, &amp;c.</p> <p><b>I</b> had sene, &amp;c.</p>
<b>Futur.</b>	<p><b>Veré,</b> Verís, Verá,   <b>Verémos,</b> Veréys, Verán.</p>	<p><b>Vederó,</b> &amp; <b>Vedró,</b> <b>Vederái,</b> &amp; <b>Vedrái,</b> <b>Vederá,</b> &amp; <b>Vedrá.</b>   <b>Vederém,</b> &amp; <b>Vedrém,</b> <b>Vederéte,</b> &amp; <b>Vedrête,</b> <b>Vederánno,</b> &amp; <b>Vedránnno.</b></p>	<p>Videbo, &amp;c.</p> <p><b>I</b> thall ôz will sê, &amp;c.</p>
	<p><b>Véc</b> tu, Véa aquél,   <b>Veámos,</b> Véd, Véan.</p>	<p><b>Vedi</b> tu, Veda, &amp; veggia colui,   Veggíám, Vedéte, Vidano, &amp; Vêggano.</p>	<p>Vide, videro, &amp;c.</p> <p><b>I</b> sê thou, &amp;c.</p>

In the Subjunctive and Infinitive mode altogether as verbes afoze going, as the Pre-  
sent tense Ver, the Pretcrimperfect, Viera, veria, viefle, the Pretcrperfect, aya vifto, the Pretcrp-  
erfect, uviera, oꝝ uviefle, vifto, the Future viere, Infinitive ver, Participle vifo,

Solér

Soler, to be wont or accustomed. *Indicat. Pres.* yo Suelo, I am wont, tu Suelas, thou art wont, he is wont. Solémos, we are wont. Soléis, ye are wont, Suelen, they are wont. *Imperfect.* Solia, Perfect. Soli. In like manner Doler, to grieve, to be fogie, declined, yo Dueño, Doli, Doli, He Dolido, &c.

*Of the third and last Coniugation of Verbs Irregular in IR or Yr, as  
VENIR, in Italian and Latin Venire, to Come.*

VENIR

Indicative mode.		Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres.	{	yo VENGO,	Io VENGO,	Venio, &c.	I do come, &c.
		tu Viénes, aquel Viéne.	tu viéni, colui viéne.		
	{	Plur.			
		Venimos, Venís, Viénen.	Veniamo, Venite, Vengono.		
Imperf.	{	Venía, Venías, Venía.	Veniva, Venivi, Veniva.	Veniebam, &c.	I did come, &c.
		Veníamos, Veníades, Venían.	Venivamo, Venivate, Venivano.		
First Perfect.	{	Vine, Veniste, Vino.	Venni, Venisti, Venne.	Veni, &c.	I have come, &c.
		Venimos, Veniste, Venieron.	Venimmo, Veniste, Vennero.		
Second Perfect.	{	He as a	Sono sei é	Veni, &c.	I have come, &c.
		Venido.			
	{	Hémos avéys an	Siámo Sete Sono		
Imperf.	{	Avia Avias Avia	Era évi era	Veneram, &c.	I had come, &c.
		Venido.			
	{	Aviamos Aviades Avian	Erauímo Erauáte Erano		
Futur.	{	Vendré o2 Verné, Vendrás o2 Vernás, Vendrá o2 Verná.	Veniré o2 Ferré, Venerá o2 Ferrá, Venerá o2 Ferrá.	Veniam, &c.	I shall o2 will come, &c.
		Vendrémos o2 Vernémos, Vendréys o2 Vernéys, Vendrán o2 Vernán.	Venirémo o2 Ferrémo Veniréte o2 Ferréte, Veniránmo o2 Ferránmo.		

Imperative

## Imperative mode.

Ven tu, Vénga a quel.	Vient tu, Vénga a colui.	Veni Venire, Ec.	Come thou, &c.
Vengámos, Venid, Véngan.	Venidmo, Venite, Véngano.		

## Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
<b>Pres.</b> Como Vénga, vengas, vénga, vengámos, vengáys, véngan.	<b>Quando</b> Venga, venghi, venga, venidmo, veniate, véngano.	<b>Cum</b> Veniam, Ec.	When I do come, &c.
<b>Imper.</b> Como Viniéra, vernia, viniéſſe, viniéras, vernias, viniéſſes, viniéra, vernia, viniéſſe, Viniéramos, verniamos, viniéſſemos, viniérades, verniades, viniéſſedes, viniéran, vernian, viniéſſen.	<b>Quando</b> venissi, veneri, verrei, verria, venissi, venerissi, verressi, venissi, veneribbe, verrebbe, verria, venissimo, veniremmo, verremmo, veniste, veniriste, verriste, venissero, venirdbbono, verrebbe, verriano.	<b>Cum</b> Venirem Ec.	When I did come, &c.
<b>Imper.</b> fect. Como aya, ayas, aya, ayámos, ayáys, ayan,	<b>Quando</b> faga, faga, faga, fagámos, fagáys, fagán,	<b>Cum</b> Fecerim Ec.	When I have come, &c.
<b>pluper.</b> fect. Como Uviéra, o2 uviéſſe, uviéras, o2 uviéſſes, uviéra, o2 uviéſſe, uviéramos, o2 uviéſſemos, uviérades, o2 uviéſſedes, uviéran, o2 uviéſſen.	<b>Venido</b> fissi, sarei, fissi, sareſſi, fissi, sarebbe, fissimo, saremmo, fiste, sareſte, fissero, sarebbono,	<b>Venuto</b> Ec.	When I had come, &c.
<b>first</b> Futur Como veniere, venieret, veniere, veniremos, venieredes, venieren.		<b>Cum</b> Venero, Ec.	When I shall or will come, &c.
<b>second</b> Futur Como Uviére, o2 avré, uviéras, o2 avrés, uviére, o2 avrá, uviéramos, o2 avrémos, uviérades, o2 avrés, uviéran, o2 avrán,	<b>Venido</b> fari, fari, fari, faremo, farete, faranno,	<b>Cum</b> Fenero, Ec.	When I shall or will come, &c.

Infinitive

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

Venir, Venire, Venire, Co come.	
Sér venido, Eſſere venuto, Venisse, Co have come.	
Aver o2 esperar de venir, Dover venire, Haber a venire, Eſſer per venire, Gerund.	Venturum eſſe, Co come hereafter.
Veniendo, Venendo, Veniendo, In coming.	
El que viene, Veniente, Veniens, One coming.	
Venido, Venuto, Qui venit, Come.	

These Verbes following in Ir, thus formed in the Present and Preterperfect Tense.

Infinitives.	Pres.	Preterp.
Adormir, to fall asleep,	yo Aduermo,	Adormi.
Dormir, to sleep,	yo Duermo,	Dormi.
Avertir, to mark,	yo Avierro,	Averti.
Arrepentir, to repent,	yo Arrepiento,	Arrepenti.
Cobrir, to recover,	yo Cébro,	Cobri.
Concebir, to conceive,	yo Concibo,	Concebi.
Cernir, to sift meal,	yo Cigno,	Cerni.
Consentir, to consent,	yo Consiento,	Consenti.
Elegir, to choose out,	yo Elijo,	Eligi.
Fingir, to feign,	yo Finjo,	Fingi.
Gemir, to groan,	yo Gimo,	Gemi.
Mentir, to lie,	yo Miento,	Menti.
Ungir, to anoint,	yo Unjo,	Ungi.
Salir, to go forth,	yo Salgo,	Salí.
Diferir, to differ,	yo Diferó,	Diferi.

Imperfect of the Indic. Diferia.

Imperfect of the Subjunct. Diferiría.

Sofrir, to suffer, yo Sofro, Sofrí.

Imperfect of the Indic. Sofría.

Imperfect of the Subjunct. Sofriría.

The Compounds of this verbe Venir, Véngo, are declined in every respect in all Modes and Tenses thow out as it is, as Revenir, to returne, Revéngo, Revine, &c. Convenir, to agree, to be expedient, yo Convéngo, Convine. Devenir, to become, yo Devéngo, Devine. Sobrevénir, to come upon suddenly, yo Sobrevéngo, Sobrevine.

Of the third and last conjugation of Verbes Irregular in IR, & YR, as Dezir, in Italian Dire, Latin Dicere to say.

DEZIR.

## Indicative mode.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.
<b>Pres.</b> Digo, dices, dice, dezámos, dezáis, dizen.	<b>Dico</b> dici, o2 di, dice, dicémo, decís, dicón,	<b>Dico</b> Ec. I ſay, &c.

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Imper	Dezia, deziás, dezia,	Dicéua, dicéua, dicéua,	Dicéam &c.	I did saie, &c.
	Dezíamos, deziades, dezian.	dicéuámo, dicéuáde, dicéuano.		
First Pers.	dixe, dixiste, dixo,	diffi, dicésti, diffi,	Dixi, &c.	I haue saide, &c.
	diximos, dixistes, dixéron.	dicémmo, dicésta, diffiero.		
Second Pers.	hé, as, a,	Dicho.	Ho Hai Ha	Ditto.
	hémós, avéys, án,		Habbiámo Hauéte Hámmo	
Plu- perfect	avía, aviás, avía,	Dicho.	Hauéua Hauéus Hauéua	Ditto.
	aviámos, aviades, avian,		Hauéuámo Hauéuáde Hauéuano	
Futur	diré, dirás, dirá,	diré, dirás, dirá,	Dicam, &c.	I shall or will say, &c.
	dirémos, diréys, dirán.	dirémo, diréte, dirénno.		

## Imperative mode.

Impe- rative mode.	Diru, diga aquel,	Di, or dicetu, dica colui,	Dic, di- cito, &c.	Saie you, &c.
	digámos, dezid, digan.	dicéámo, dite, dicano.		

Note that you shall finde with god Authors Dezi for Dezid, in the second person plural number of the Imperative.

## Subjunctive mode.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.
Pres. Como	Quando	Cum
Diga, Digas, Diga,	Dica, Dici, Dica.	Dicam, &c.
Digámos, Digáys, Digan.	Diciámo, Diciáte, Dicano.	

Imperfect

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Imper fec. Como	Dixéra, diria, dixéffe, Dixéras, dirias, dixelles, Dixéra, diria, dixéffe,	Quando	Dixéramos, diríamos, dixéssimos, Dixérades, diríades, dixéssedes, Dixéran, dirían, dixéssen.	Quando	Diréi, dicéssi, deria, Dirésti, dicésti, Dirébbe, dicébbe, deria.	Cum	Dirémmo, dicéssimo, Diréste, dicéste, Dirébbono, dicéssero, deri- Quando ano.	Direrem, &c.	When I did say, &c.
	A'ya, ayas, aya,	} dicho.	Ayámos, ayáys, ayan,	Habbiá, Habbi, Habbiá,	} Detto.	Dixerim, &c.	When I haue said, &c.		
Pers. Como	uviéra, oꝝ uviéffe, uviéras, oꝝ uviésses, uviéra, oꝝ uviéffe,		} dicho.	Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Habbiáno,		Cum	Dixissem, &c.	When I had said, &c.	
	uviéramos, oꝝ uviéssimos, uviérades, oꝝ uviéssedes, uviéran, oꝝ uviéssen,	Hauéssi, Hauésti, Hauéssi,		} Detto.	Hauéssimo, Hauéssite, Hauéssino,				
First Futur. Como	Dixére, Dixéres, Dixére,	} Cum	Dixéremos, Dixéredes, Dixéren.		Dixero, &c.	When I shall or will say, &c.			
	uviére, oꝝ avré, uviéres, oꝝ avrás, uviére, oꝝ avrá,		} dicho.	Haueró, Hauerái, Hauerá,	Cum	Dixero, &c.	When I shall or will say, &c.		
Second Futur. Como	uviéremos, oꝝ avrémos, uviéredes, oꝝ avréys, uviéren, oꝝ avrán,	} dicho.		Hauerémo, Haueréte, Hauerénno,	} Detto.				

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

DEZIR, ]	Dire, ]	Dicere, ]	to say, to tell.
Avé Dicho, ]	hauer Detto, ]	Dixisse, ]	to haue said or told.
Avé de Dezir, ]	Esser per dire, Hauer a dire, ]	Disturnum esse, ]	to say hereafter.

## Gerunds.

Deziéndo, ]	Dicéndo, ]	Dicéndo, ]	In saying.
El que Dize, ]	Dicénte, ]	Dicénte, ]	one telling or saying.
Dicho, ]	Detto, ]	Dicénte, ]	could, said, spoken.

El que ha or Espera de Dezir, ]	Donéndo dire Hauéndo a dire, Esséndo per dire, ]	Disturnum, ]	about to say hereafter.
---------------------------------------	--	--------------	-------------------------

The Compounds of this verbe *Dezir*, *Digo*, in all points throw all *Phases* and *Tenses* declined like the Simple, as

Infinitives.	Pres.	Pterp.
Biendezir, to besse,	yo Biendigo,	Biendixe.
Maldezir, to curse,	yo Maldigo,	Maldixe.
In like sort these following thus,		
Conduzir, to conduct,	yo Condulgo,	Condúxe.
Introduzir, to bring in,	yo Introdugo,	Introdúxe.
Induzir, to induce,	yo Indulgo,	Indúxe.
Traduzir, to translate,	yo Tradulgo,	Tradúxe.
Produzir, to produce,	yo Produzgo,	Prodúxe.
Salir, to goe forth,	yo Salgo,	Sali.
Regir, to governe,	yo Rijo,	Regi.

After the manner of *Dezir*, is this verbe *Salir*, to go out or make a sallie, declined, as in the Present tense of the Indicative mode yo Salgo, I go out, tu Sales, thou goest out, &c. Pterp. imperfect yo Salía, &c. First Pterp. perfect, Sali. Second Pterp. perfect, he Salido, &c. Pluperfect. avia Salido. Future, yo Saldre. Imperative Salir, goe thou out, Salga aquél, let him goe out, &c. Subjunctive Present tense, yo Salga, tu Salgas, &c. Pterp. imperfect. Saliera, Saldria, Saliese, &c. Pterp. perfect. aya Salido. Pluperfect. uviéra Salido. Future Saliere. Infinitive Salir. Gerund Saliendo. Participle Salido.

So Seguir to follow, yo Sigo, Sigui, Sigui. He Seguido, avia Seguido, Seguiré. Imperative Sigue tu follow thou, Siga aquél let him follow, Sigámos let us follow, Seguid follow ye, Sigán let them follow. Subjunctive Present, Como yo Siga. Imperfect. Siguiéra, Seguiria, Siguiése. Pterp. perfect. aya Seguido. Pluperfect. uviése Seguido. Future Seguiere, &c. Infinitive Seguir, Participle Seguido. So in all points is Conseguir to obtaine, declined.

Sumir, to drench or overwhelme, differing from Sumar, to sum bp, thus. In the Present of the Indicative all one yo Sumo, Imperfect yo Sumia, I did drench, yo Sumava, I did summe bp. First Perfect, yo Sumí, I have drencht, tu Sumiste, aquél Sumió, yo Sumé, I have summed bp, tu Sumaste, thou hast summed bp, aquél Sumó, he hath summed bp, &c.

Of the third and last Coniugation of Verbes Irregular in IR or YR, as YR, in Italian Ire or Andare, in Latin Ire, to Goe.

## Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
	YO Y,	VO & VADO,	Eo,	I goe,
	Vás,	Vái,	is, &c.	thou goest, &c.
	Vá,	Vá,		
Pres.	Vámos,	Andiámo,		
	Váys,	Andáte,		
	Ván,	Vámo,		
	Y va,	Andáua,	Ibam, &c.	I did goe, &c.
	yvas,	Andáui,		
	yva,	Andáua,		
Imper.	yvamos,	Andauámo,		
fect.	yvades,	Andauáte,		
	yvan,	Andauano.		
	Fu y,	Andái,	Iui, &c.	I went, &c.
	Fuiste,	Andásti,		
	Fué,	Andó,		
First	Fuimos,	Andámmo,		
Perfe	Fuistes,	Andásti,		
	Fuéron.	Andárono,		

second

second perfect.	{ He, as a.	{ Y'do.	{ Sono, Sei, é,	{ Andato.	{ Iui, &c.	{ I have gone, &c.
	{ Hémos, avéys, an,		{ Siámo, Sete, Sono,			
pluper fect.	{ Avia, Avia, Avia,	{ Y'do.	{ Era, Eri, Era,	{ Andato.	{ Iueram, &c.	{ I had gone, &c.
	{ Aviámos, Aviades, Avian,		{ Erauámo, Erauáste, Erano,			
Futur	{ Yré, Yrás, Yrá,	{	{ Anderó, & Andró, Anderai, & Andrái, Anderá, & Andrá,	{ Ibo, &c.	{	{ I shall go, &c.
	{ Yrémos, Yréys, Yrán.		{ Anderémo, & Andrémo, Anderéte, & Andréte, Anderánno, & Andránno.			
Imperatiue mode.						
	{ Va, & Vc, Váya,		{ Vá, Váda, Vadi,			
	{ Vámos, yd, Váyan.		{ Andiámo, Andáte, Vádano, & Vádino.			

## Imperative mode.

Vete, Vete, Get thee hence, Get thee hence. With Authors this Verbe is sometime written with Y, sometimes with I.

## Subjunctive mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
	Váya,	Vada,	Eam, &c.	When I doe goe, &c.
	Váyas,	Vada & Vadi,		
	Váya.	Vada & Vadi.		
Pres.	Vámos,	Andiámo,	Cum	
	Váys,	Andáte,		
	Váyan.	Vádano & Vádino.		
	Fuéra, Yría, fuéffe,	Andássi, Anderéi, Anderia,	Irem, &c.	When I did goe, &c.
	Fuéras, yrias, fuéffes,	Andássi, Anderéssi,		
	Fuéra, yría, fuéffe.	Andássi, Anderébbe, Anderia,		
Imper	fect.	Quando	Cum	
	Fuéramos, yriamos, fuéffemos,	Andássimo, Anderémmo,		
	Fuérades, yriades, fuéffedes,	Andáste, Anderéste,		
	Fuéran, yrian, fuéffen.	Andássero, Anderébbono, Anderiano.		
	áya, áyas, áya,	Sia, Sij, Sia	Iuerim, &c.	When I have gone, &c.
Perf.	Como	Quando	Cum	
	áyamos, ayáys, áyan,	Siámo, Siaste, Siano		

Pluperf.

Plus- perfect. Como	Y'do.	Quando uviéra, o2 uviéffe, uviéras, o2 uviéffes, uviéra, o2 uviéffe, uviéramos, o2 uviéffemos uviérades, o2 uviéffedes, uviéran, o2 uviéffen,	Quando Fóffe, sarei Fóffe, saréffi Fóffe, sarébbe Fóffimo, sarémmo Fóffe, saréffe Fóffero, sarébbono	Andato.	Cum Iuiffem, &c.	When I had gone, &c.
				Andati.	Cum Iuero, &c.	When I shall o2 will be, &c.
First future. Como	Y'do.	Fuere, Fuéres, Fuere, Fuéremos, Fuéredes, Fuéren,				
second futur. Como	Y'do.	uviére, o2 avré uviéres, o2 avrás, uviére, o2 avrá, uviéreimos, o2 avrémos, uviéredes, o2 avréys, uviéren, o2 avrán,	Quando Saró Sarás Saró Sarémo Saréte Sarámo	Andato.	Cum Iuero, &c.	When I shall o2 will go, &c.
				Andati.		

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

Y'R, ]	Andare, ire, ]	Ire, ]	to Go.
Aver y'do, ]	Hauer andato, ]	Iuiffe, ]	to have Gone.
Aver de y'r, ]	Doner Andare, ]	Iturum effe, ]	to Go hereafter.
	Hauer ad Andare, ]		
	Effer per Andare, ]		
Y'endo, ]	Andando, ]	Eundo, ]	In Going.
Yr, ]	Andare, ]	Itum, ]	Supines.
De lerydo, ]	Effer Andato, ]	Itu, ]	to be Gone.
El que va, ]	Andante, ]	Euni, ]	one Going.
Y'do, ]	Andato, ]		Gone.

Of

## Of Verbes Impersonals.

The Spanish as the French and Italian Impersonals are of the manner of the Latines, which want the first and second person, and are declined only in the third person throughout all Modes and Tenses, as

## Indicative mode.

Present.	Ay,	There is.
Imperfect.	Avia,	There was.
1 Perfect.	úyo,	There was.
2 Perfect.	á,	There hath bene.
Pluperfect.	avia,	There had bene.
Future.	Avrá,	There shall be, &c.
Imperat.	A'ya,	Let there be.

## Subjunctive mode.

Present.	Aya,	When there is.
Imperf.	uviéra, avría, uviéffe,	When there was.
Perfect.	aya Avido,	When there hath bene.
Pluperfect.	uviéra o2 uviéffe Avido,	When there had bene.
Future.	uviére o2 Avra Avido,	When there shall be.

Note that the Spaniard almost continually bleth this Impersonall Ay as the French their *Il y a*, in English There is, as by observing you shall most usually finde, as also this thirde person Comple thus declined, of Comple the Infinitive.

## Indicative mode.

Present.	Cómpie,	Decet, Oportet,	It becometh o2 behoneth.
Imperfect.	Complia,	Decbat, Oportebat,	It did beseme.
1 Perfect.	Complió,	Decuit, Oportuit,	It hath besamed, &c.
2 Perfect.	a Complido,	Decuit, Oportuit,	
Pluperfect.	Avia Complido, Decuerat, Oportuerat,		
Future.	Complirá,	Decebit, Oportebit,	

And so throughout the third person of the rest.

## Indicative mode.

Present.	E'r,	There is.
Imperfect.	era,	There was.
1 Perfect.	fue,	There hath bene.
2 Perfect.	avia Sido,	There hath bene.
Pluperf.	avia Sido,	There had bene.
Future.	Será,	There shall be, &c.

And so decline forward, as in the Subjunctive mode of the verbe Ser, Soy afore going in the third person only.

## Indicative mode.

Present.	Es menester,	Oportet,	It behoveth.
Imperf.	era menester,	Oportebat,	It did behoue.
1 Perfect.	fue menester,	Oportuit,	It hath behoued.
2 Perfect.	a sido menester,	Oportuit,	It hath behoued.
Pluperf.	avia sido menester, Oportuerat,		It had behoued.
Future.	avra menester,	Oportebit,	It will behoue.

And so throughout the rest, &c.

## Indicative mode.

Present.	Pláze,	It pleaseth.
Imperf.	Plazia,	It did please.
1 Perfect.	Plúgo,	It hath pleased.
2 Perfect.	a Plazido,	It hath pleased.
Pluperf.	avia Plazido,	It had pleased.
Future.	Plazera,	It will please.
Imper.	Pléga,	Let it please.

Subjunctive

## Subiunctive mode.

Present.	Pléga,	When it doth please.
Imperf.	Pluguiera, Pluguieſe,	When it did please.
Perfect.	aya Plazido,	When it hath pleased.
Imperf.	uviéra Plazido,	When it had pleased.
Future.	Pluguiera,	When it will please.

To forme an Impersonal of the Passive voice, you must take this particle *Se*, and the third person of any verbe thus: which particle so added makes a verbe Impersonal Passive, as

Pres.	Se Dize,	Si dice o2 diceſe,	Dicitur,	It is said o2 spoken,
Imper.	Se Dezia,	Si dicéna o2 dicénaſe,	Dicebatur,	It was said o2 spoken
Imperf.	Se Dixo,			ec.
Perfect.	Se a Dicho,			
Imper.	Se a Dicho,			
Future.	Se Dirá,			

## Of Participles.

**Participle of the Present tense.** I Spaniſh Participles of the present tense and active ſignification are made of the third person present tense of the Indicative mode of the same Verbe, putting before it the Particle, *El que*, as *El que Revela*, revealing, *Latin Revelans*: *El que Entiende*, vnderstanding, in *Latin* *Intelligens*: *El que oye*, hearing, in *Latin* *Audiens*.

**Participle of the Preter tense.** Participles of the Preter tense and passive ſignification end in *ido*, *ido*, o2 *ydo*, which in the first coniugation are formed of the third person of the Present tense of the Indicative mode, by adding to do, as, *Revela*, revelado: *Amá*, amado: *Caſtiga*, caſtigado: and in the seconde and third coniugation of the same Present tense, by chaunging *e*, into *ido*, and *ydo*, as *Entiende*, entendido: *Lée*, Leydo: *Crée*, creydo: *Pide*, pedido.

But for the Irregular (according to the nature of the word) without rule, as *Factus*, hecho, made, *Dixi*, Dicho, said, spoken.

**Participle of the Future tense.** The future tense with this Verbe *Ha*, o2 *Eſpera*, and the Infinitive of the Verbe, as *El que ha o2 Eſpera de revelar*, *Entender*, o2, *oyr*: *Revelaturus*, *Intellecturus*, *Auditurus*, about to reueale, about to vnderſtande, about to heare.

**Participle of Present tense and active ſignification.** *El que revela*, *entiende*, *oye*, *Latin*, *Reuelans*, *Intelligens*, *Audiens*, *Reuealing*, *vnderſtanding*, *hearing*.

**Participle of the Preter tense and passive ſignification.** *Revelado*, *Entendido*, *oydo*, *Latin* *Reuelatus*, *Intellectus*, *Auditus*, *Reuealed*, *vnderſtood*, *heard*.

**Participle of the Future tense.** *El que ha o2 eſpera de revelar*, *Entender*, *oyr*, *Latin* *Reuelaturus*, *Intellecturus*, *Auditurus*, *to reueale hereafter*, *to vnderſtand hereafter*, *to heare hereafter*.

## Of Aduerbes.

I have handled before the fower parts of ſpeech declined. Now come we to the other fower vndeclined, called Indeclinable, beginning firſt with the Aduerbes, whereof ſome in the Spaniſh tongue are formed of ſhownes of the feminine gender in *a*, as are almoſt all the Aduerbes of Qualitie, as *Alta*, high; *Altamente*, highlie; *Graciosa*, gracioſamente, graciouſlie; *Luenga*, luengamente; in *Latin* *Diu*, long: which manner of forming the Italian likewise obſerue, as *Gratiosamente*, Longamente, Sauamente, ſo doth the French, making the word to end in *Ment*, as *Gratieuſement*, Longement, Sagement. Wherefore I thinke good to ſet downe the Aduerbes following and the reſt: firſt, the Spaniſh, then Italian, after French, next Latin, and laſt Engliſh: euerie one ſeparated one from another with this crooked line thus, ] Aduerbes ſome be

**of Qualitie.** *Fielmente*, *Fidelmemente*, *Fideliſer*, *Faithfully*.  
*Buénamente*, o2 *bien*, *Bene*, *Bien*, *Bene*, *Well*.  
*Malamente*, o2 *mal*, *Male*, *Mauiſement*, *Male*, *Ill*.  
*De buena gana*, *Di buona voglia*, *Voluntiers*, *de bon cuer*, *Libenter*, *Willingly*.  
*Volontieri*, *volontieramente*,

**of Quantitie.** *Mucho*, *Molto*, *Beaucoup*, *Multum vel Multo*, *Much*.  
*Poco*, *Poco*, *Peu*, *Parum vel Paululum*, *Little*.  
*Mucho mas*, *Via piu*, *Beaucoup plus*, *Multo magis*, *Much more*.  
*Mas*, *Piu*, *Plus*, *Magis*, *More*.  
*Por demas*, *Troppo*, *Trop*, *Nimis*, *to Much*.  
*Demasiado*, *Troppo*, *Trop*, *Nimis*, *to Much*.

**of Time.** *Oy*, *Hoggi*, *Auiourd'huy*, *Hodie*, *To daie*.  
*Ayer*, *Hieri*, *Hier*, *Hier*, *Yesterday*.  
*Mañana*, *Demani*, *Demain*, *Cras*, *To morrowe*.  
*Antier*, *Antieri*, *Deuant hier*, *Pridie*, *The other day*.  
*El dia ſiguiente*, *Il ſequento giorno*, *Le lendemain*, *Postridie*, *The next daie after to morrowe*.  
*Mucho ha*, *Molto fa*, *Deja long temps*, *Iamdudum*, *Long ſince*.  
*Poco ha*, *Poco fa*, *Nagueres*, *Iamdudum*, *A little ſince*.  
*Agóra*, *or*, *ora*, *aceſt heure*, *Iamiam*, *Euen now*.  
*Antes*, *Inanzi*, *Deuant*, *Ante*, *Before*.  
*Luégo*, *Preſto*, *Toſto*, *Soudainement*, *Illico ſtatim*, *ſwiftnith*, *by and by*.  
*Nunca*, *Giamai*, *Inamais*, *Nunquam*, *Neuer*.  
*Quando*, *Quando*, *Quand*, *Quando*, *When*.  
*Siempre*, *Sempre*, *Tousjours*, *Semper*, *Alwaies*.  
*Entónces*, *Al hora*, *Donques*, *Tunc*, *Then*.  
*Mientras*, *Mentre*, *Cependant*, *Interim*, *In the meane while*.  
*Súbito*, *Subito*, *Sodainement*, *Subito*, *Sodainly*.  
*Muchas vezes*, *Molte volte*, *Molte ſiate*, *Fort ſouent*, *Sepe*, *Merie often*.  
*Pocas vezes*, *Rade volte*, *Peu ſouent*, *Raro*, *Seldom*.  
*Algunas vezes*, *Qual che ſiate*, *Quelquefois*, *Aliquando*, *Sometimes*.  
*Qual che ſiate*,

**of Place.** *Aquí*, *Qui*, *quasi*, *Icy*, *Hic*, *hic*, *Here*.  
*Allí*, *allí*, *Iui*, *la*, *cola*, *quini*, *La*, *audela*, *Illic*, *There*.  
*A Donde*, *Donde*, *oue*, *Ou*, *Ubi*, *quo*, *Whither*, *where*.  
*De Donde*, *Onde*, *donde*, *Dont*, *d'ou*, *Vnde*, *from whence*.  
*Acá*, *Digna*, *Paricy*, *Hac*, *this way*.  
*Acullá*, *Cola per cóſta*, *Par dela*, *Iſac*, *iſue*, *that way*.  
*De aquí*, *De qui*, *Quinci*, *D'icy*, *Hinc*, *from hence*.  
*De allí*, *de allí*, *Indi*, *di la*, *Quindi*, *Dela*, *Illic*, *from hence*.  
*Dentro*, *Dentro*, *entro*, *Dedans*, *Intus*, *within*.  
*Fuera*, *Fuori*, *di fuori*, *Hors*, *de hors*, *Foris*, *foras*, *without*.  
*Delante*, *Inanzi*, *Deuant*, *Ante*, *Before*.  
*Atrás*, *Dietro*, *Derrier*, *Post*, *Behinde*.  
*A parte*, *De banda*, *al'cart*, *Separatim*, *ſcorſum*, *aſide*, *aſpart*, *by it ſelfe*.  
*Arriba*, *Sopra*, *di ſopra*, *In ſu*, *ſoſo*, *Enhaut*, *Superius*, *Above*.  
*Abáxo*, *In giu*, *giuſo*, *ſotto*, *di ſotto*, *En bas*, *Deorſum*, *Beneath*.  
*Cerca*, *Intorno*, *dattorno*, *Enuiron*, *Circiter*, *About*, *nigh vnto*, *almoſt*.  
*Cábe*, *Iunto*, *Apreſſo*, *dancino*, *Preſt*, *aupres*, *Prope*, *Neare vnto*.  
*Léxos*, *Lontano*, *di lunghi*, *Loin*, *Procul*, *far off*.  
*Encima*, *Su*, *ſopra*, *Superius*, *Super*, *Upon*.  
*So*, *Sotto*, *di ſotto*, *Deſſous*, *Subter*, *Under*.

**of Affirming.** *Si*, *Si Senor*, *Si*, *as Signore*, *Si*, *Ouy*, *as ouy*, *Mounſieur*, *Ite*, *ita*, *Domine*, *Yea*, *yea fir*.  
*Cierto*, *ciertamente*, *Certo*, *certamente*, *Certes*, *certi*, *Truely*.  
*En verdad*, *verdaderamente*, *In verita*, *di vero*, *in vero*, *Vrayement*, *en verite*, *certainement*, *Verè*, *Truely*, *in truth*, *verily*.  
*Tambien*, *Si bene*, *etiando*, *ancor*, *anche*, *Si bien*, *ainſi*, *auffi*, *Eriam*, *quoque*, *as well*.  
*Antes*, *Piu toſto*, *Pluſtoſt*, *Potius*, *Rather*.

## Of Aduerbes.

- of Denying [NO,] *Non, no, ne,* Non, neny, pas, point,] *Non, haud, minime,*] *Not.*  
 Nada, No nada,] *Niente, nulla,*] Rien,] *Null,*] *Nothing, nothing at all.*  
 [Ni,] *I am poco,*] *Ne,*] *Ni, ne,*] *Neque,*] *Neither.*
- of numbering [VNAVEZ,] *Vna bolta, Vna fiata,*] *Vne fois,*] *Semel,*] *Once.*  
 Dos vezes,] *Due volte, Due fiata,*] *Deux fois,*] *Bi,*] *Twice.*  
 Tres vezes,] *Tre volte, tre fiata,*] *Trois fois,*] *Ter,*] *Thrice, &c. as in the Pronounce*  
*before of Numbers.*  
 Muchas vezes,] *Spesso volte, molte fiata,*] *Beaucoup de fois,*] *Sape,*] *Often times.*  
 Pocas vezes,] *Rade volte,*] *Rarement,*] *Raro,*] *Seldome.*
- of Shewing [HEA QVI,] *Ecco,*] *Voicy, voila,*] *Ecce,*] *Behold.*
- of Encouraging. [EA, EA PUES,] *Su, corraggio,*] *Sus, courage,*] *Age, perge,*] *Go to then.*
- of encereasing. [MAS,] *Plus,*] *Plus,*] *Plus,*] *More.*  
 Mucho mas,] *Molto piu, molto affai,*] *Beaucoup plus,*] *Molto magis,*] *Much more.*  
 De mado,] *Treppo, di foverchio,*] *Trop,*] *Quoniam,*] *Too much.*
- of Diminishing. [MENOS,] *Meno,*] *Moins,*] *Paulo minus,*] *Less.*  
 Poco a poco,] *Poco a poco,*] *Peu a peu,*] *Paulatim,*] *By little and little.*  
 Paflo,] *Transfano,*] *Tout bellement, Petit a petit,*] *Sinfim,*] *Soft and faire.*
- of wishing. [OXALA,] *O Dio vaglia, Dio volesse,*] *Pleust a Dieu,*] *Utinam,*] *would to God,*  
 I pray God.  
 [OSI,] *Osé, Ofé,*] *Pleust a Dieu que,*] *Finam,*] *would to God, I pray God.*
- of asking. [PORQUE,] *Perche?*] *Pourquoy?*] *Quare?*] *Why? wherefore?*  
 Que? *Ché?*] *Quoy?*] *Quid?*] *What?*  
 Donde? *Onc?*] *Ou,*] *Physique,*] *Where.*  
 Adonde,] *Dunc,*] *Ou,*] *Quo,*] *Whether.*  
 De donde,] *Onde,*] *Dou, dont,*] *Finde,*] *From whence.*  
 Quando? *Quando?*] *Quand?*] *Quando?*] *When.*
- of doubting. [QVI A,] *Forse, a caso,*] *Fortuitement,*] *Fortassis,*] *Perhaps.*  
 Porventura,] *Peraventure,*] *Paraenture,*] *Fortasse,*] *Peradventure, Perhaps.*
- of Order. [DESPUES,] *Poi, dopo, Dopo, deppo,*] *A pres, depuis,*] *Post,*] *After.*  
 Allende de esto,] *Oltra a cio, oltra a questo,*] *Ontre ce, d'aduantage,*] *Præterea,*] *Further.*  
 Finalmente,] *Alla fine,*] *En fin, Finablement,*] *Tandem,*] *At length.*
- of Likeness. [COMO,] *Comme,*] *Comme,*] *Sicut, velut,*] *As.*  
 Assi,] *Cosí,*] *Ainsi,*] *Ita, sic,*] *So.*
- of Chance. [A CASO,] *Pordicho,*] *A caso,*] *Fortuitement,*] *Fortuito,*] *By chance, by hap.*
- of Comparison. [MAS,] *Piu,*] *Plus,*] *Plus,*] *More.*  
 Menos,] *Meno,*] *Moins,*] *Minus,*] *Less.*  
 Mucho mas,] *Via piu, Affai piu,*] *Beaucoup d'auantage,*] *Molto magis,*] *Much more.*  
 Mucho menos,] *Molto meno,*] *Beaucoup moins,*] *Molto minus,*] *Much less.*  
 Mejor,] *Migliore,*] *Mellicur,*] *Melius,*] *Better.*  
 Peor,] *Peggior,*] *Pis,*] *Peior,*] *Worse.*  
 Todo del mundo,] *Piu del mondo,*] *Tout le mond,*] *Maximé,*] *Chiefly.*
- Garthering together. [IVNTO,] *Insieme,*] *Ensemble,*] *Simul,*] *Together.*
- Seuering. A PARTE,] *Seperatamente,*] *Al'escart,*] *Seperatim, scorsim,*] *A sundre*
- Choosing. [MAS Ayna,] *Piu tosto,*] *Plustoft,*] *Potius,*] *Rather.*  
 Mucho mas,] *Molto meglio,*] *Beaucoup mieux,*] *Potius,*] *much Rather.*
- Contrariety. [TODA vez,] *Tutta via,*] *Toutefois,*] *Tamen,*] *Notwithstanding.*  
 Aunque,] *Come, che, Etandio che, Anchor che,*] *Encore,*] *Eriam,*] *Although.*

with=

## Of a Coniunction.

- with D= [ALOMENOS,] *Almeno, almeno,*] *Au moins,*] *At the least.*  
 wing. [Solo,] *Solo,*] *Seul,*] *Solum,*] *Only.*  
 [Porque,] *Per, accioche, che,*] *Pourceque,*] *Propterea,*] *For that.*

## Of a Coniunction.

A Coniunction is that which knitteth and ioieth parts of speech together, and is with the Spaniard almost in the same manner as the Latin, saving they have not so many, but yet some are

*Conjunctio*  
*causalis*  
*conferentia*

- of coupling [Y, and E,] *et,* *And.*  
 [Como,] *Comme,*] *Comme,*] *Et.*  
 [Tambien,] *Ancor, Etandio,*] *Si bien, ainsi, aussi,*] *Eriam, Quoque,*] *Also.*

Nota. Note that E properly is not a Spaniard Coniunction, but only used for the Y, when the word following beginneth with a Y, because two Y Y, should not come together, La ley e la Justicia, and not La ley y la Justicia, but otherwise alwaies use Y.

- of Disioyn- [Ni,] *Né,*] *Ne,*] *Nec, Neque,*] *Neither.*  
 ing. [O,] *O, ouero,*] *Ou,*] *Aut, Ve, Vel, Seu, Sine,*] *Either.*

- of Causing. [PORQUE,] *Accioche, Percioche,*] *Pourceque,*] *Propterea quod,*] *For that, wherefore.*

- of Condition- [SI,] *Se,*] *Si,*] *Si,*] *If.*  
 nng. [Dado que,] *Se caso,*] *Si aussi,*] *Si ita,*] *If so.*

- of Except- [SINO,] *Senon,*] *Sinon,*] *Nisi,*] *Except, if not.*  
 ting. [Mas,] *Ma,*] *Mais,*] *Quin,*] *But.*  
 [Otramente,] *Atramente,*] *Autrement,*] *Alioquin,*] *Otherwise.*

- of Diminishing. [ALOMENOS,] *Almeno, Almeno,*] *Au moins,*] *Saltem,*] *At least.*

- [AVNQUE,] *Ancor, Quantunque,*] *Encore,*] *Etsi quamquam,*] *Although.*  
*Benche, Etandio,* *Quamvis,*

- [TODA via,] *Tutta via, Tutta volta,*] *Toutefois,*] *Tamen, esse,*] *Notwithstanding.*  
*Nondimeno, Nondimanco,* *Nientidimeno,*

## A Preposition.

Preposition. The Spaniard hath the same use of Prepositions as the Latins have, sometimes by composition with another word, as Bolvér, to turne; Rebolvér, to overturne; Hazér, to do, Rehazér, to renewe, &c. Sometime by apposition (as the Latins doe) by putting the Preposition before the Noun, as Ala corte, to the court: Por el Rey, for the king: En la yglia, in the church.

Nota. Note that this Preposition De, or Des, alwaies makes the word that it is ioyned with, of a quite contrary signification, as Hazér, to do: Des hazér, to undo: Atar, to tie or bind: Desatar, to untie: Canfado, to care: Descanfado, resting: Dicha, happiness: Deldicha, unhappiness, misfortune: And so in the French, Faire, to do: Desfaire, to undo: Lier, to binde, Deslier, to unbinde, &c. Prepositions of the Spaniard thus,  
 A,] *A,*] *Ad,*] *Ad,*] *Co,*] *As A fe, ala fe,*] *A fete, A fe,*] *Par ma foy,*] *Per fidem,*] *By my troth.*  
 De,] *De, de da,*] *De, du,*] *De,*] *Of or from,*] *as De la corte,*] *De la corte,*] *Du palais,*] *From the court.*  
 Para,] *Per,*] *Pour,*] *Propter,*] *For,*] *as Para mi,*] *Per me,*] *Pour moy,*] *Propter me,*] *For me.*  
 Por,] *Per,*] *Par,*] *Per,*] *For, by or thowow,*] *as Por mi vida,*] *Por mia vita,*] *Par ma vie,*] *Per vitam,*] *By my life.*

h i

[Contra,



Contra.] *Contra, Incontra, Contre, Contra, Against.*  
 Contra el estado.] *Contra il stato, Contre l'estat, Contra statum, Against the estate.*  
 C A B E.] *Proffo, Appreffo, Preff, aupres, Prope, Prope, as Cabe la ciudad, Appreffo la città, Apres de la citie, Prope urbem, Prope ere the citie.*  
 FRONTERO.] *Rimpetto, Vis a vis, E regione, Duer against.*  
 HASTA.] *Fino, Sino, Julques, Jusque, Until.*  
 Infino, Infino, ]  
 HA' ZIA.] *Fer, verso, Enuers, Versus, Towards.*  
 SOBRE.] *Sopra, Disopra, Sur, Super, Upon.*  
 In su, Sus, ]  
 ENCI MA.] *In il pu alto, En la somette, In vertice, Upon the top.*  
 SO.] *Sotto, difotto, Ciu, De fous, Subter, Under.*  
 ENTRE.] *Fra, infra, Entre, Inter, Betweene.*  
 ATRAS.] *Dietro, Derrier, Poné, Behind.*  
 ADELANTE.] *Dimanz, Juant, Deuant, Ante, Before.*  
 Cerca, Acerca, Circa, Intorno, Attorno, Enuiron, Circum, Circa, About.  
 Fuera, Fuori, Hors, dehors, Fria, Foras, Without dozes.  
 Dentro, Dentro, Dans, dedans, Intus, Within.  
 Con, Con, Auec, Cam, With.  
 Sin, Senza, Sans, Sine, Without.  
 Delde, From of since, as Delde la muerte, Sec. From, or since the death, &c.

These following are vsed with the Preposition De, with them, as  
 Aquende de la casa, Di qua de la casa, Par de ça de la maison, Ex hac parte domus, On this side the  
 Allende, Di là, Par de là, Ex altera parte, On the other side. (house.  
 Al dered, or Entorno, Intorno, Attorno, Enuiron, Circum, Circa, About.

## Of an Interiection.

An Interiection declareth a sudden passion of the minde. The Spaniards vse  
 not so often Interiections, or sudden passions of the minde; neither in their  
 speech nor writing, as both the French, or Italian, and yet they haue these follo-  
 wing: Some be of  
 Wirth or [O Bueno,] Oh bene, He bien, he dea, Eux, vah, Well.  
 Weeping. [Hi, hi, hi, or Ha, ha, ha,] Ah, ah, Ah, ch, Ha, ha, he, Ha, ha, he.  
 Laughing. [O Iesus, or] Oh, oh, Oh, oh, Pape, Iesus good Lord helpe me.  
 Wondring. [Vala me Dios,]  
 Grieving. [Ay, ay,] Ah, ah, ahime, Las, olis, helas, ach, Heu, hei, Plag, out alas.

## Of Syntaxis.

Definition of Syntaxis. Syntaxis is a due coupling together of Speech according to the right Rules of  
 Grammar, which the best Authors, both Ancient and Moderne haue still  
 vsed in writing and speaking.

Syntaxis, of the Greeke word *σύνταξις*, which is *Con*, and *τάξις*, *ordinis*, *quasi*,  
*coordinatio*, which is construction or agreement.

But for that the Spanish (as the Italian and French) being deriued from  
 the Latin (as before said, and still keepeth as great affinity as silver and tinne, both  
 proceeding (as Alchimistes saie) from quicksilver, or as no one can gain say from the  
 mother earth, or as a different plant grafted on a strange stocke or tree: It must  
 necessarily be ordered by many Rules of the Latin, which here to repeat were lost  
 labour and in vaine, as hath seemed to the most part of all those learned, that of any  
 these vulgar languages haue written: finishing their Grammars at the ende of  
 the eight parts of speech and leaving this quite out: which order I haue obser-  
 ued, referring the Latin Reader to the Rules of the Latin Syntaxis for this part  
 of Grammar, and other to due obseruation in reading good Authors: wishing in-  
 crease to both, to their owne contents, and my selfe hereby to haue furthered both,  
 to mine owne chiefe desire.

F I N I S.

I Haue for the Learners vse desirous of the tongue, read ouer diuers Authors, ga-  
 thering out of them the hard phrases and manner of speech, the vncouth sayings,  
 together with some prouerbes, as they fall in their places (which are the difficul-  
 tie of the tongue) and explained them in English, commonly setting downe first the  
 English word for word as the Spanish is, then this *id est*, that is to say, for  
 the sense and meaning, then the line and the leafe of the booke, that by these the  
 Learner may the better iudge of their like when he meeteth with them. For the leafe  
 I set downe *fol.* and *a.* signifieth the first side of the leafe, and *b.* the second, *lin.* signifi-  
 eth what line, and the figure after *fol.* telleth the leafe, and *lin.* what line it is. If you  
 finde *pag.* it is to finde what page of the booke. If you see *1. part.* it is for the first vo-  
 lume or part of the booke, and *2. part.* for the second, &c.

Words, Phrases, Sentences and Proverbes out of DIANA  
of Monte Mayor in 16. printed at Antwerpe 158c.

Los de mas. *fol. 3. b. lin. 14. The rest.*  
 Las horas que se sobrávan. *fol. 4. b. lin. 2. The howers which remained, or The rest of the*  
*howers.*  
 Tomádo a vézes. *fol. 4. b. lin. 6. Taking by fits or turnes.*  
 Passar por el pienfamiéto. *fol. 4. b. lin. 14. and 7. a. lin. 25. and 26. b. 2. To enter into the minde or*  
*thought.*  
 Tami poco le dáva pena. *fol. 4. b. lin. 17. Neither did it grieue or trouble him.*  
 A vuestro salvo. *fol. 6. b. lin. 17. Your selfe being safe, or without your owne danger.*  
 Como los uisite a las manos? *fol. 10. b. lin. 5. How came they to your hands? or how came you*  
*by them?*  
 Por tu vida. *fol. 10. b. lin. 21. By thy life, I pray thee hartly.*  
 Tomár de córo. *fol. 10. b. lin. 23. To take by quire, i. To haue by memorie, hart, or without*  
*booke.*  
 Favorecére me a mi. *fol. 11. b. lin. 5. and Me moviera a mi. fol. 2. a. lin. 8. To fauour me and did moue*  
*me. Here the Spanish vseth two accusatiue cases after the verbe, both of the person: and not*  
*as the Latin, one of the person and another of the thing.*  
 Despues que te fuisse. *fol. 11. b. lin. 21. After thou wentest.*  
 Yo fuí, tu fuí, se, aquél fué, nos fuímos, fuýstes, fuéron. I went, thou wentest, he went, we  
 went, ye went, they went. This Fuy, fuýste, commeth of the Infinitive mode *ir*, to goe, and the  
 very same Fuy, fuýste, fue, &c. commeth of the Infinitive mode *Ser*, to be: but loke backe in the  
 Grammar and compare the two verbes together.  
 De ay a un poco. *fol. 11. b. lin. 28. A pretty while after.*  
 Que es del? *fol. 12. a. lin. 20. Where is he? What is become of him?*  
 Quando se pone el Sol. *fol. 13. a. lin. 8. When the sunne sets.*  
 Fuera de mi, fuera de ti, fuera de si. *fol. 13. b. lin. 14. Besides my selfe, besides thy selfe, besides*  
*himselfe, or Out of my wit, out of thy wit, out of his wit.*  
 Tén púnto. *fol. 13. b. lin. 24. Stay, hold, stop. Give me leaue a little.*  
 Le va bien, le va mal. *fol. 15. a. lin. 7. It goes well with him, it goes ill with him. He is well,*  
*he is ill.*  
 Mucho a. A good while since.  
 Mucho avia, mucho úvo, mucho avrá. *fol. 17. a. lin. 4. It was a good while agoe, it hath been a*  
*good while since, it shall be long agoe.*  
 Poco ha or Poco fa. A little while agoe, or a little since.  
 Poco avia, Poco úvo, Poco avrá. It was a little since, it hath been but a little since, it shall or  
 will be but a little while agoe.  
 Muchos dias acá, Pocos dias acá. *fol. 17. a. lin. 7. Many daies since, a few daies since.*  
 Mucho tiempo há, Poco tiempo há. A good while agoe, a little while agoe.  
 Grandes dias há, Pocos dias há. A great while agoe, a few daies past.  
 Cosa en la vida. *fol. 17. a. lin. 12. Any thing in the world.*  
 Hazer caso. *fol. 17. b. lin. 21. To esteeme of, to make matter of.*  
 Muchos ay, or Ay muchos. *fol. 20. a. lin. 6. There are many.*  
 Que os tengo dicho. *fol. 20. a. lin. 29. Which I haue told you.*  
 Quiso mi ventura. *pag. 21. a. lin. 11. My fortune would haue it so.*  
 Que de oro no les llevara ventaja. *fol. 21. a. lin. 20. verbatim. That the vantage of golde did not*  
*carrie*

carrie it away from them. i. Gold did not excede them in brightnes.

Y a la mano ag. 21. b. lin. 28. verbatim. To goe to ones hand. i. To stop, to stay, to let of to hinder one from doing any thing.

Del dicho de mi. fol. 22. b. lin. 6. verbatim. Wretched of me. i. Wretched that I am, unhappie creature I. Woe is me, wretched that I am.

No se haze mucho al caso. fol. 22. b. lin. 11. It makes not much matter to thee, it concerns thee not much.

De veras. fol. 22. b. lin. 20. In earnest.

De burlas. fol. 22. b. lin. 20. In jest.

Ena via. fol. 23. a. lin. 2. Notwithstanding.

Harer de industria. fol. 23. a. lin. 22. To doe of set purpose.

Plegue a Dios. fol. 23. b. lin. 5. I would to God.

De ay a ocho dias. fol. 24. b. lin. 6. Eight daies hence.

No ay cosa en la vida. fol. 25. a. lin. 14. There is nothing in the world.

Alisipulo per obra. fol. 26. b. lin. 11. So he did put it in practise.

Vayan a oiros a cuantos. fol. 10. a. lin. 21. Let sighes goe by millions.

Y quiera Dios que. &c. fol. 40. b. lin. 4. And would to God that, &c.

Ambos a dos. fol. 46. b. lin. 5. Worth.

Fuera de si. fol. 47. b. lin. 14. Besides himselfe, out of his wits.

Venir a las manos. fol. 47. b. lin. 16. to come to blowes or fight.

Como en ellos fuera la vida. fol. 48. a. lin. 11. As if thercon his life lay.

A bueltas della. fol. 48. b. lin. 13. Together therewith.

Mal ya a aquel. fol. 49. a. lin. 13. Woe be unto him.

Poner el negocio a las manos. fol. 50. b. lin. 24. To bring the matter to blowes or fight.

Que en otra cosa no entendia sino en, &c. fol. 51. b. lin. 24. verbatim. Which in any other matter understood not, i. which thought on nothing els but, &c.

Se dexo dormir. fol. 52. a. lin. 25. verbatim. Let himselfe or herselfe sleepe, fell asleep.

No se qual me creia. fol. 53. b. lin. 19. I know not which I may believe.

De violer. fol. 53. b. lin. 25. verbatim. It ought to be, it could not be otherwise.

Basta lo hecho. fol. 54. a. lin. 16. It sufficeth that it is done. Basta lo dicho, it is enough that is once spoken of, or it needs no more words.

Como supo callar. fol. 54. a. lin. 19. How she knew to holde her tong, how well she could be mute, and not answer a word.

Ni por pensamiento en ella. fol. 54. b. lin. 13. By no means.

Que me mas que a si. fol. 55. b. lin. 1. To loue me more or better then himselfe, or herselfe.

No es de cauallero. fol. 55. b. lin. 26. It is not the part of a Gentleman.

Tener en mucho, Tener en poco. fol. 56. a. lin. 2. To esteeme much, or to set much by, to set little by, or esteeme little.

Y quente lo dixo, Se lo supo encarecer de manera. fol. 56. a. lin. 25. And he that told it, could tell how to augment and amplify it in such sort.

Alisipule por obra. fol. 56. b. lin. 24. So I put it in practise, or set it a worke.

Alisipule deucha a la corte. fol. 57. a. lin. 3. And so I went straight to the court.

Cos no po. o gustos de oye. fol. 57. a. lin. 5. verbatim. Things not little tastefull to heare, i. Things not a little delightfull to heare.

En la voz, or en la habla le conocy. fol. 57. a. lin. 25. I knew him by his voice or speech.

La musica diu a otra no a mi. fol. 58. a. lin. 20. The musike played to another and not to me.

Le deua mucho. fol. 61. a. lin. 9. verbatim. Oweth him much, i. he is much beholding to him.

Esta vella de auencia destaze las cosas. fol. 61. a. lin. 14. This rascals absence doth vndo all.

No avra ninguna que no se pierda por vos. fol. 61. b. lin. 3. There will be none which is not lost in loue for you, i. which will not be ready to runne madde for you.

Moza bonita, or bonica. fol. 61. b. lin. 5. A good wench, a fine trull, made or girl.

Diéxos de la verdad. fol. 62. b. lin. 13. to be wide or farre off from the truth.

Parecer me hya, or ia. fol. 63. a. lin. 12. It did seeme vnto me. This manner of speech in Spanish is by the figure *Epenesthi*, which is the putting in of a letter or syllable in the middle of a word, as in this Parecer me hya, for Pareceria me, It did seeme to me.

Dar una palmada. fol. 63. a. lin. 13. To giue ones selfe a pat or blow on the breast, or els where in signe of wounding.

Granger favores. fol. 66. b. lin. 5. To hoard by fauours.

Perdido per amores. fol. 67. a. lin. 22. I oft for loue, madde in loue.

Si tuéssse seruido. fol. 68. a. lin. 9. If he pleased, or liked well of.

Un desmayo con que avia dado el alma. fol. 68. a. lin. 27. A swooning or traunce, with which he had giuen by the ghost.

Pluguera a Dios. fol. 68. b. lin. 12. Would to God.

Llego al alma. fol. 69. a. lin. 7. To enter into the soule, to greue at hart.

Tornó

Tornó la mano de respondelle. fol. 69. a. lin. 9. To keepon her to answer her, or stode by her for the companie to answer her.

Pusieron la mesa. fol. 71. a. lin. 15. They couered the table.

El sol se pone. fol. 72. a. lin. 5. The sun was set.

Que aya sido parte. fol. 74. a. 20. Which hath bene the cause.

En har lo en burlas. fol. 76. a. lin. 5. verbatim. To cast it off in testing, i. To test it out.

A todos hazia ventaja. fol. 76. a. lin. 16. He did excell all, he did excede or ourpasse all.

Rogando muy encarecidamente. fol. 76. b. lin. 8. Requesting very earnestly, very instantly.

Fulana tiene buen ayre, Fulano, es capatador. fol. 79. a. lin. 23. & 24. Such a one hath a god grace or countenance, such a one is dauncer of a gigge.

Puesto en tanta obligacion. fol. 80. a. lin. 20. Being so much beholding or bound.

Echada a la sombra, Echado a la cama. fol. 82. b. lin. 2. To aide in the shadowe, cast on the bed.

Tuviéssse por bien. fol. 82. b. lin. 8. verbatim. Did holde for good, i. Thought well of, or took in good part.

Mal aya amor, su arco y su flecha. fol. 83. a. lin. 11. The diuell take Ioue, his bowe and his shaft.

Passillos ha, or ia. fol. 83. b. lin. 7. I woulde passe them ouer. This speech by the figure *Epenesthi*, which is a putting betweene of letter or syllable in the middle of a worde, as Passillos ha, for Passarios los, I woulde passe them ouer. Also in Passillos another figure called *Anisfoucon*, which is a writing one letter for another, by changing R of the Infinitive made into L, a thing most vsuall in the Spanish, as here Passillos for Passarios, so Habillos, for Hablarlos, to speake unto them: Vellos, for Verlos, to see them: Dezillos, for Dezirlos, to tell them: Oylles, or Oylos

or Oyries, or los, to heare them.

Aviendo ydo quanto media legua. fol. 89. a. lin. 21. Having gone about halfe a league.

Se fue su passo a pallas. fol. 84. a. lin. 6. Went very fast and suddenly.

Los denas de los dias. fol. 86. b. lin. 2. The rest of the daies.

Y en las manos sendos vasos hechos a la Romana. fol. 90. b. lin. 3. And in their hands each one a severall becell made after the Romane fashion.

Mesas puestas. fol. 91. a. lin. 21. Tables couered or laide.

Piedras engastadas. fol. 91. b. lin. 1. Stones enchased.

Alcar, or quier la mesa. fol. 91. b. lin. 4. To take by the table.

Vistieron a Felismina, vna ropa y basquina de fina grana, recamadas de oro de canuillo, y aljófar, vn cucha, y mangas de tela de plara. fol. 94. a. lin. 5. They apparelled Felismina with a gowne and peticote of fine scarlet colour imbrodered with imbois or raised golde and pearle, a callocke and sleeves of cloth of siluer.

En ofion de redezilla. fol. 94. a. lin. 14. A coiffe of net worke.

Las paredes eran labradas de obra Moysica. fol. 94. b. lin. 16. The wals were worke Jewisly worke or Turkey worke without images.

Duarte. fol. 98. b. lin. 19. Edward.

Miralde bien. fol. 101. a. lin. 1. Behold him well, by the figure *Metathesi*, which is a changing places of letters, for Miralde very common in the Spanish in the Imperative mode the seconde person plurall number, as Lealdo for Leald lo, Heade per it: Dezildo, for Dezid lo, Tell him that:

or Dezildes for Dezidles, Tell them: so Miralda for Mirad la, Behold her: Miraldas, for Mirad las, Behold them. fol. 103. a. lin. 3.

Ojos verdes y rasgados. fol. 103. a. lin. 28. Faire and great eyes.

Desde el borea al austro. fol. 104. a. lin. 22. From the north to the south.

En quanto se hazia hora de cenar se fueron a vna alameda. fol. 105. a. lin. 16. And while supper time came they went to a groue of poplars.

Mediante la quel. fol. 109. a. lin. 24. By means whereof.

Gentil hombre y bien tallado. fol. 110. a. lin. 13. A proper man and well shaped, and not for as English men call gentleman.

Cavalo rucio rodado. fol. 110. a. lin. 15. A horse dapple graie.

Traya en la cinta vn alfanje. fol. 110. a. lin. 19. He caried at his girdle a Turkie sword.

Traya en el brazo yskierdo. fol. 110. a. lin. 24. He caried on his left arme.

Bolver sobre si. fol. 110. b. lin. 21. To come to ones selfe as out of a traunce, astonishment or the like.

Tocar un cuerno. fol. 111. a. lin. 16. verbatim. To touch, i. To winde a horne.

Llevar el camino de los companeros. fol. 111. a. lin. 19. verbatim. To carrie the way of his fellows.

To take the same way, to be served with the same sauce, to drinke of the same cup.

Túvolo en mucho. fol. 113. a. lin. 9. He much esteemed it.

De ay algunos dias. fol. 116. a. lin. 18. From hence a few daies.

Tenérme campo. fol. 119. a. lin. 5. verbatim. To hold me field, i. To be able to stand with me or fight with me.

Hazer campo. verbatim. To make field, i. To combat, to fight.

No le lo que hara de mi. fol. 119. a. lin. 18. I know not what shall become of me.

b 3

Tenéd

Tenéd entendido fol. 126. b. lin. 2. *verbatim*. *Hold understood. i. Understand.*  
 Ambas a dos fol. 126. b. lin. 27. *Both.*  
 Plega a Dios fol. 130. b. lin. 24. *I would to God.*  
 Por lo poco que se dáva por el fol. 133. a. lin. 23. *For the little esteeme he made of him.*  
 No se me da nada. *verbatim*. *It gives nothing to me. i. I care not.*  
 Avrá como cinco o seys meses fol. 147. a. lin. 3. *It shall be some five or six monethes.*  
 Cosa en que tan poco te yva fol. 149. a. lin. 19. *A thing which so little did import thee.*  
 Me a dádolo de mano fol. 150. a. lin. 26. *He hath taken his leave of me.*  
 Fálida de unas montañas fol. 157. b. lin. 13. *verbatim*. *the skirt. i. The side or hanging of an hill.*  
 Vino a dar en un bosque muy grande, de verdes alisos y azebúches affaz poblado. fol. 158. a. lin. 2.  
*He came to light into a wood very great, sufficiently storoz with greene fallowes and wilde olives.*  
 Y de subito fue a dar con los ojos en una muy hermosa ciudad, que desde de lo alto de una sierra, que de frente estáva. fol. 158. a. lin. 6. *And upon a sudden he espied a faire citie from the top of a mountain, which was right against them.*  
 Se fué su passo a passo por una senda que junto a l río yva házia la parte. fol. 158. b. lin. 6. *He went faire and soft in a path which lead nere the river toward that part, &c.*  
 Sobre las cabeças, tenían sendas guirnaldas de verde yedra. fol. 158. b. lin. 18. *Upon their heads they had each of them severall garlands of greene iue.*  
 Con cierto deldén y un dar de mano. fol. 160. a. lin. 12. *With a certaine disdain and putting from with the hand.*  
 Dize pues que su muger es finada que me case con el? fol. 160. a. lin. 24. *Saith he, seeing that his wife is dead, that I marrie with him?*  
 Paréc en medio bivar. fol. 190. b. lin. 28. *To lue at the next wall, but one wall betwene.*  
 Parár mientes. fol. 193. a. lin. 21. *To marke, to heede.*  
 Plazér acabado. fol. 226. a. lin. 12. *Complete or full top or pleasure quite ended.*

## Diana de Monte Mayor 2. part.

Encaminár obras a personas de lustre. fol. 2. a. lin. 5. *To direct woorkes to persons of fame.*  
 Si Dios fuere servido fol. 2. b. lin. 7. *verbatim*. *If God shall be served. i. If it shall please God.*  
 De mi grado jamas entenderia fino en solo loáros. fol. 3. a. lin. 7. *By my good will I would never do any thing else but praise you.*  
 Vaya fuera toda rogancia fol. 3. b. lin. 12. *All pride set aside.*  
 Como a cada uno compia. fol. 7. a. lin. 2. *As was mete for every one.*  
 No les comple yie. fol. 7. b. lin. 20. *It is not mete they goe.*  
 Con el fi del matrimonio fol. 8. a. lin. 26. *With the answering to the minister yea at the marriage.*  
 Vámonos fol. 10. a. lin. 10. *Let vs goe, for Vámonos nos.*  
 Dexémosnos fol. 19. a. lin. 22. *Let vs leave, for Dexémos nos.*  
 Amará la sed fol. 10. a. lin. 20. *To quench thirst.*  
 Por una cüesta abaxo fol. 11. b. lin. 11. *Downhill.*  
 A vézes fol. 21. a. lin. 1. *By turnes, by fits.*  
 O vala me Dios fol. 22. a. lin. 6. *God helpe me.*  
 Plugüera a Dios fol. 22. a. lin. 17. *I would to God.*  
 Dado que fol. 22. b. lin. 21. *Grant that, suppose that.*  
 Mercéd leñalada fol. 28. b. lin. 26. *A notable curtesie.*  
 El traydór del Cupido fol. 36. b. lin. penultima. *The traitor Cupide.*  
 Tener en mucho fol. 38. b. lin. 1. *To esteeme much of.*

## Wordes, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbes out of Celestina in 8.

printed at Antwerpe En la oficina Plantiniana

Anno 1595.

De mas. pag. 1. lin. 5. *Duer and aboute, besides, moreover.*  
 Recibido tienen. pag. 3. lin. 6. *verbatim*. *They hold received. i. They haue received.*  
 Tener la firma del autor. pag. 4. lin. 21. *To haue the authoys name to it.*  
 Leeldo. pag. 8. lin. 9. *Read it, by the figure Metathesi, which is a changing of places of letters, very common in the Spanish in the seconde person plural of the Imperative mode, as this Leeldo for Leed lo, as Castigado, chastise him, for Castigado lo, Pedilde, require of him, for Pedidle, Oylde, heare him, for oyde le.*  
 A ródor corrér devéis de huir. pag. 10. lin. 11. *verbatim*. *With all running away you ought to auoide. i. With all haste possible to run or flynn.*

En

En quien quépa esta differéncia. pag. 17. lin. 4. *In whom may be contained or found this difference.*  
 Confeja tras de fuego. pag. 13. lin. 3. *A tale by the fires side, an old wiuers tale.*  
 Ofrecido tener. pag. 22. lin. 13. *verbatim*. *To hold offered. i. To haue offered.*  
 Vere, vete de ay. pag. 23. lin. 18. *Get thee hence, get thee hence.*  
 Abatíóse el girafake. pag. 23. lin. 28. *The Gerfaulcon bated.*  
 Los Diablos te gánen. pag. 24. lin. 1. *The Devil take thee.*  
 Que cosa es? pag. 24. lin. 20. *What is the matter?*  
 Dexárla he? pag. 25. lin. 2. *Shall I leave him?*  
 Matárla ha. pag. 25. lin. 3. *He is to kill himselfe, or he will kill himselfe.*  
 Desbráve, Madúre. pag. 25. lin. 15. *Let him pacifie or calme himselfe, let him ripen or come to a head.*  
 Si delante me tiéne. pag. 25. lin. 22. *If he haue me before him.*  
 Mudár el pelo malo. pag. 25. lin. 29. *To change ill fortune.*  
 Ves lo aqui. pag. 26. lin. 15. *See it here.*  
 De la aparéncia a la existéncia. pag. 27. lin. 14. *From that which seemes to be, to that which is in deede.*  
 No cabe en coraçón de mi ámo. pag. 28. lin. 6. *It is not within the compasse of my masters hart.*  
 Que por la boca le sale a borbollónes. pag. 28. lin. 6. *But that it must bubble out of his mouth.*  
 Ha, ha, ha. Hi, hi, hi. pag. 28. lin. 14. *Voices of laughing.*  
 Alieñár tiros. pag. 28. lin. 17. *To aime.*  
 Elcozióte. pag. 30. lin. 27. *It touchte you, it made you smart.*  
 Metér por los agujeros. pag. 32. lin. 25. *verbatim*. *To put into holes, i. to take in at windowes.*  
 Desque se descúbrén. pag. 33. lin. 1. *From the time they discover themselves.*  
 Cativo de mi, Melquino de mi. pag. 34. lin. 20. *Wretch that I am.*  
 Assí me medre Dios, Assí me medre Dios. pag. 34. lin. 23. *verbatim*. *So God make me thine, i. So God helpe me or prosper me.*  
 Duclos tenémos. pag. 34. lin. 28. *We haue mournings in hand.*  
 Ojos verdes y ralgados. pag. 35. lin. 14. *Faire and great eyes.*  
 La vez liza y lustrosa. pag. 35. lin. 24. *The skin smooth and cleere.*  
 Buen ándo haze esto. pag. 37. lin. 8. *This makes good going forward.*  
 Dias grandes ha, or Muchos dias ha. pag. 37. lin. 5. *A good while since.*  
 Quede Dios con v. m. pag. 37. lin. 29. *God be with you, or God remaine with you.*  
 Dios vaya con v. m. pag. 37. lin. 29. *God conduct, or be your speed.*  
 Vaya v. m. con Dios. *God in Gods name.*  
 Que es del? pag. 38. lin. 15. *What is become of him? where is he?*  
 Hi, hi, hi. pag. 39. lin. 2. *A voice of laughing.*  
 Tres dias ha. pag. 39. lin. 4. *It hath bene thre daies.*  
 Vo, for Voy. pag. 39. lin. 12. *I goe.*  
 Por mi vida, Por tu vida. pag. 39. lin. 27. *I pray thee hartly.*  
 Quedate a Dios. pag. 40. lin. 11. *God remaine with you, or keepe you.*  
 Sey, for Se tu. pag. 40. lin. 21. *We thou.*  
 No púde desleñar bien, de que no te cupiéñe parte. pag. 41. lin. 1. *I could not so much as desire, as with any goodnes, in which thy part was not contained therein.*  
 Si quiera, for Solamente. pag. 41. lin. 4.  
 Gelo prometí. pag. 41. lin. 28. *I promised him it or that, for Se lo prometí.*  
 Tha, tha, tha. pag. 42. lin. 3. *The noise or beating of the knocking at a doze.*  
 O que comedor de huévos assados. pag. 43. lin. 21. *Oh what a eater of roasted egges.*  
 De que le servias? pag. 44. lin. 4. *In what place or office diddest thou serue her in?*  
 Curár de punto. pag. 47. lin. 18. *To heale or cure with stitching vp, as with needle and thred.*  
 Téngote lo en grácia, or mercé. pag. 48. lin. 24. *I thanke thee for it.*  
 Como quiera. pag. 49. lin. 29. *Whomsoever.*  
 Dar en el fiel. pag. 51. lin. 4. *To hit the pizike at shooting.*  
 Para mi sangüada. pag. 51. lin. 13. *By my hallidome.*  
 Do vino el áño, verná el albarda. pag. 51. lin. 13. *verbatim*. *Where the asse is come, the packe saddle will come. i. where the greater doth yelde, the lesse must of necessity come after.*

After I had read ouer *Diana de Monte mayor*, and other authors, gathering out the hardest speeches and explaining them for the learners use, and being come thus farre in *Celestina*, as you see, it came into my imagination that running thorow him and such other hard authors, by vnfoling so open to euerie ones view

view the difficultest points in the toong, might breede some dislike in men of mine owne profession (to whom I wish as to my selfe) as alló little thankfulness of others, who hauing their turns serued, do commonly verifie this prouerbe, (Eaten bread is forgotten.) I thought good not to deale all at once, but to keepe some to sweeten their mouths heereafter, as they shall be desirous heereof, and the rather, for that notwithstanding all this and more paines to, with cost out of my purse, neglecting my profession and liuing, I haue already before I came neere the presse, tasted and had some experience of some of the greater sorte (if wealth and place haue that prerogative) which neuer sawe any thing of my dooing in their life, or heard mee speake, by discourteous dealing enough to discourage mee from the publishing of any thing, to pleasure or profit many; yet for the better minded, and more courteous disposed, I heere go so farre with the Englishing heereof, and seme prouerbes following, whose curticie if friendly I finde, may cause me to the farther vnfoling of this language to his farther content.

Words, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbs out of *La vida de Lázaro de Tormes* in 8 printed in *Antwerpe En la oficina Plantiniana*, Anno M. D. XCV.

Lo que uno no cómo, otro se pierde por ello. pag. 2. lin. 13. *That which one eateth not, another it is lost for it, or longeth after it.*

No sea mas santo que mis vecinos. pag. 5. lin. 7. *Not to be more holy then my neighbours.*  
Achaçion a mi padre ciertas sangrias mal hechas en los costales. pag. 7. lin. 18. *They laid to my fathers charge certaine ripping the sides of the facks.*

Arumir a los buenos. pag. 8. lin. 7. pag. 91. lin. 1. *To leane or stay ones selfe vpon the good.*  
Echar la fogatras el caldero. pag. 10. lin. 12. *verbatim.* *To cast theroye after the caldron. i. To cast the helle after the hatchet.*

Vale te por ti. pag. 11. lin. 16. *verbatim.* *We of auaille for thy selfe. i. Shift for thy selfe.*  
Par de una cosa. pag. 11. lin. 26. *Just euen with any thing.*

Mas da el duro que el desnuído. pag. 19. lin. 28. *verbatim.* *More giuerty the hard then the naked. i. More giuerty the miser of curmudgeon then he that hath it not to giue.*  
Escapé del trueno y di en el Relampago. pag. 28. lin. 23. *I escaped the thunder and fell into the lightning.*

No poder tener en las piernas. pag. 30. lin. 24. *Not to be able to stand vpon the legs.*  
Dar el reloj a una, Dar las dos, las tres, &c. pag. 49. lin. 15. *The clocke to strike one, two or thre.*  
Ha dado la una, Han dado las dos, las tres, &c. pag. 50. lin. 25. *It hath stroke one a clocke, two a clocke, thre a clocke.*

En un crédito. pag. 57. lin. 14. *In the twinkling of an cie.*  
Una de vaca. pag. 62. lin. 1. *I neates foote.*  
La bolsa sin maldita la blanca. pag. 65. lin. 16. *The diuell a penny in his purse.*

Oy dia. pag. 65. lin. 24. *At this day.*  
Quebramos el ojo al Diabolo. pag. 66. lin. 7. *Let vs breake the necke of the Demill.*  
Voto o boto a Dios. pag. 70. lin. 4. *I sa care by God.*

Del rey abaxo. pag. 71. lin. 6. *From the king downward.*  
Romper çapatos. pag. 77. lin. 13. *To weare out shoes.*  
Lançar del el demonio. pag. 85. lin. 8. *To cast out the diuell from him.*

Matar con un hombre. pag. 92. lin. 6. *To fight with a man.*  
Quien bien te hará o seyrá o se morirá. pag. 94. lin. 7. *He that shall or will doe thee a good turne, either he will be gon, or he will die.*

Words, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbs out of *Meno preço de la Corte*, or in French *Mespris de la Court* in 16. printed An. M. D. XCI. per Iehan de Tournes.

Yr me a mia la mano. pag. 70. lin. 19. *verbatim.* *To goe me to my hand. i. To hinder, let or stop my selfe.*

Ir por el atajo. pag. 93. lin. 14. *To goe t he shortest way.*

Dar de mano a la corte. pag. 127. lin. 20. *To shake hands or take leane of the Court.*

Dar

Dár la corte a Dios. pag. 137. lin. 10. *To bid the court farewell.*  
Andár en cuerpo. pag. 197. lin. 1. *To goe in hole and doublet without a cloake.*  
No es de pañar entre renglones. pag. 200. lin. 20. *It is not to be left obscurely, or it is to be plainly written or set downe.*

Verdura para la olla. pag. 202. lin. 19. *Herbes for the pot, potheerbes.*  
Bever de buçes. pag. 209. lin. 5. *To drinke as an oxe or such beastes.*  
Jugar al herrón. pag. 227. lin. 13. *To play at coites.*

Coner vn toro. pag. 228. lin. 3. *To batte a bull.*  
A pared y medio. pared en medio. com. Plauto. fol. 4. b. lin. 18. pag. 234. lin. 13. *The next wall to one, But a wall betweene.*

Clérigo sin breviario. pag. 259. lin. 8. *A priest without a breuiarie.*  
Ruár calles. pag. 273. lin. 14. *To gad about the streets.*  
A penas. pag. 289. lin. 20. *Hardly.*

Embocar la bola al juego de argolla. pag. 360. lin. 2. *To cast the bowle into the hole of the ring at that play of Argolla. i. A ring.*  
Tirar coques. pag. 380. lin. 10. *To kicke.*

Traer de tema la gorra. pag. 388. lin. 12. *To set his hat to the good aleward, on one side the head.*  
Sospécho que son pocos, y muy pocos, y aun muy poquitos y muy repoquitos. pag. 406. lin. 1. *I suspect there are few and very few, yea most few, yea fewest of all.*

Words, Phrases, Sentences, and Prouerbs out of *Floreña Española*, in 16. Printed in Salamanca, 1592.

Estoy maravillado. *Epist. dedicatoria.* pag. 2. lin. 9. *I wonder, I maruel.*  
El linage donde no avia corona, nunca medrava. fol. 6. b. lin. 4. *verbatim.* *That kindred that had had a crowne in it neuer thriued. i. a priest.*

Mas pañe e chichón, que Cardinal. fol. 7. b. lin. 1. *It seemed rather a wolke or pusle then a tripe blacke and blew.*  
Rézias cámaras. fol. 11. a. lin. 18. *Strong stowings.*

Macho de silla. fol. 13. a. lin. 15. *A nagge.*  
Vn hombre de gran memoria sin letras, tiene rueca y huso y no estambre. fol. 21. a. lin. 1. *A man of great memorie without learning, hath a rocke and a spindle, and no stiffe to spin.*

Bolár vna grulla o ave. fol. 43. b. lin. 5. *To fite at the Herron.*  
Guisar la comida. fol. 43. b. lin. 6. *To dresse meate.*  
Defensillar. fol. 53. b. lin. 19. *To put out of a chaire. Also to unsaddle.*

Vnos moços de espuelas. fol. 60. b. lin. 1. *Lackies or footemen.*  
A esse Page o capalde o encapalde. fol. 61. b. lin. 18. *Either gelde this page or giue a cloake.*  
Tal cádre de vaca. fol. 74. b. lin. 2. *Such a chaire was vacant.*

Llámo me. fol. 76. a. lin. 15. *I call my selfe, or I am called.*  
Puntos de çapatos. fol. 85. b. lin. 14. *The stiches of shoes, or hce of shoes, as nines, tens, &c.*  
Al frey lo veréys. fol. 93. a. lin. penultima. *verbatim.* *By trying you shall see. i. By prouing you shall finde.*

Os demande la palabra. fol. 94. b. lin. 2. *Let him challenge your word or promise.*  
Hazér quartos. fol. 90. a. lin. 3. *To quarter.*  
Parir mientes. fol. 500. a. lin. 7. *To marke.*

Caldo. fol. 102. b. lin. 5. *Booth, pottage.*  
Hazér la barba. fol. 112. a. lin. 16. *To trim the beard.*  
De buena gana. fol. 226. b. lin. 5. *With a good will.*

Dezir gracias. fol. 234. a. lin. 18. *To speake merrie conceits.*

Marco Aurelio.

Sublimar, abastir. pag. 11. lin. 18. *To lift vp and to abase.*  
A ley de bueno os juro. pag. 27. lin. 28. *By the faith of a good man I sweare.*  
Conviene a saber. pag. 42. lin. 16. *That is to wit.*

Sobrepujar. pag. 46. lin. 11. *To ouerpoise.*  
Pendón de taverna. pag. 51. lin. 9. *The signe of a tauerne.*  
Jugar al axedrés. pag. 59. lin. 20. *To play at Chess.*

Poner obligación. pag. 234. lin. 26. *To binde, to make one beholding to him.*  
Poner el águila en los pechos. pag. 245. lin. 20. *To put the Eagle on his breast. i. To sweare the Emperours amies the Eagle.*

Armár

Armár çancadilla. pag. 256. lin. 2. *To trip.*  
Cavalló de axedrez. pag. 279. lin. 26. *The Knight at Chess.*

De Comédia de Plauto Milite glorioso in 16. printed  
at Antwerp M. D. LV.

Fletár vna não. fol. 8. b. lin. 19. *To hire a ship and pay passage money.*  
Hazer á lo largo en la mar. fol. 8. b. lin. 23. *To lanch into the maine at sea.*  
Dios te pague. fol. 12. a. lin. 11. *God rewarde thee.*  
Ponér o? Hazer lumbre. fol. 17. a. lin. 23. *To make a fire.*  
El puerco muerto fabe mas quando se come. fol. 22. a. lin. 25. *A dead hog tasteth best when he is eaten.*  
Hermáno del leche. fol. 25. b. lin. 17. *A foster brother.*  
Poco me doy por esso. fol. 28. b. lin. 19. *A little care I for this.*  
Ordin tramas. fol. 29. b. lin. 8. *verbatim. To spin webs. i. To wozke deccites.*

Comédia de Plauto Menechmos in 16. bound with  
Milite glorioso.

Para que se tenga en mas. fol. 54. b. lin. 16. *That he or it may be more esteemed.*  
Ambos a dos mancebos. fol. 55. b. lin. 15. *Both the young men.*  
No perdáys palabra. fol. 56. b. lin. 10. *verbatim. Do not lose a word. i. Be attentive to that one shall say.*  
Hazer de nueuas con alguno. fol. 67. a. lin. 19. *To make himsele strange with one, when he knoweth him well enough.*

Araucana in 16. three in one volume, Printed in  
Antwerp. 1597.

Cúchilla de la montañá. Elógio. pag. 3. lin. 8. *The edge or ridge of a hill.*  
Rociada dar. Elógio. pag. 3. lin. 12. *To give a volley of shot.*  
Como consta por sus obras. Elógio. pag. 7. lin. 5. *As appeareth by his wozkes.*  
Medir la pical en enemigo. fol. 3. b. lin. 33. *To come to push of a pike with the enimie.*  
Poblados penáchos. fol. 4. a. lin. 32. *Thicke plumes of feathers.*  
Hazerse a lo largo. fol. 3. a. lin. 10. *verbatim. To make himsele aloof. i. To step out as men in a quarrell to draw their weapon.*  
A rienda suelta. fol. 31. b. lin. penult. *verbatim. With a loose raine of a bridle. i. at libertie, freele, as Reyra rienda suelta. To laugh freele, at libertie.*

I would goe forward in this course of seeking hard places and phzases in Authozs, but for that I haue now much other buñnes that neuer concerns me, onely certaine Proverbs which I haue heretofore for mine owne vse gathered, and here leaue some of them to your vse, as you shall best like them.

Refranes. Proverbes.

First setting downe the English worde for worde according to the Spanish,  
with this worde Verbatim. Afterwarde if it haue a sense differ-  
fering from the worde, the meaning thus, i. for  
ideft: that is to saie.

N O puede ser mas negro el cuervo que sus alas. *verbatim. The crowe can not be blacker then his wings. i. Nothing can excede the highest degre.*  
Quien a su enemigo popa, a sus manos muere. *verbatim. Whosoever disdainfully dallies with his enimie, dies by his owne hande. i. by making no reckoning of his enimie, receaues damage.*  
Quien cómo dexa, dos vezes pone la mesa. *verbatim. Who directh and leaueth for another time, couers the table twise. i. He that keepeth in store, seaueth his turne when he hath neede.*  
Gran sabór es comer y no escotar. *verbatim. It is great sauozines to dine or cate, and not to paie any shot or reckoning. i. Good drinking of wine of another mans purse.*

La

La codicia rómpe el saco. *verbatim. Couetousnes burleth the bagge. i. neuer thinketh it full till it beake.*  
Mas vén quatro ójos que no dos. *verbatim. flower eyes se better then two. i. Two heades are better then one.*  
Mas vale páxaro en máno que bueyre boládo. *verbatim. Better a birde in hand then a Quilur fly- ing. i. A birde in hand wozth ten in the bush.*  
Entre hermanós, no metas tus manos: Porque, quien los desparte, lleua la peor parte. *verbat. Betweene brothers put not thou thy hands; for who so seuers them hath the wozst of it.*  
Ni de cñopa buen camila, ni de puta buena amiga. *verbatim. Neither of hurdes is made a good shirt, nor of a queane a good loucr.*  
Quien ha officio ha beneficio. *verbatim. He that hath an occupation or office hath a benefite and a benefice.*  
En la boca cerrada no entra mosca. *verbatim. In a closed by mouth a sic cannot get in.*  
Mas cerca están mis dientes que mis parientes. *verbatim. My teeth are nearer to me then my kindred. i. My teeth is my coate, but nearer is my shirt.*  
Mas vale ser cabeça de Ratón, que cola de León. *verbatim. Better to be the head of a Mouse then the talle of a Lion. i. Better be chiefe in a meane place, then vnderling in a greater.*  
Da Dios hávas, a quien no tiene quixádas. *verbatim. God giueth beanes to them that haue no iawes to cate them. i. God sends foies fortune.*  
A cavallo comedór cabéstro corto. *verbatim. To a greedie eating horse, a short halter. i. To a probi- gall man meane fortune: a curst cowe short hoznes.*  
Dime con quien ándas, y dezirte he quien éres. *verbatim. Tell me with whom thou goest, and I will tell thee what thou art. i. Birdes of a feather will flocke together; like will to like.*  
En la boca del discreto, Lo público es secreto. *verbatim. In the wisemans mouth, That is manifest is kept secret.*  
Piedra movediza, no cria moho. *verbatim. The rolling stone engenders no mosse.*  
Mas vale faber, que aver. *verbatim. It is better to haue knowledge then riches.*  
Quien mal en horna, saca los panes tuertos. *verbatim. He that setteth in the bread in the oven naughtily, draweth out the loaves crushed awrie: as one brewes so let him drinke: as one plots so it proues.*  
Quien da presto, da dos vézes. *verbatim. He that giues quickly, giueth twise.*  
Miedo guarda viña y no viñadéro. *verbatim. Feare keepeth and looketh to the vineyard and not the owner. i. Feare makes one looke about.*  
A muertos y a ydos no ay amigos. *verbatim. To dead men and absent there are no friends left. i. Out of sight out of minde.*  
La cóz de la yegua no haze mal al pótro. *verbatim. The kicke of the mare hurteth not the colt. i. A friends reproue neuer doth ill.*  
A vn traydor dos alevófos. *verbatim. To one traitor, two traitors. i. To ouer reach one craftie knaue, set two craftie knaues to him and they will cony catch him. The Italian saith, A vn fuso, vn fino y mezo.*  
Jurado ha el año de negro, no hazer blanco. *verbatim. The bath of the blackmoe hath wozne not to whiten. i. That which is byed in the bone will neuer out of the flesh.*  
En casa del melquino, manda mas la muger que el marido. *verbatim. In the house of the simple soule, the wise commands moze then the husband. i. In the house of the silly man of necessitie and of force: The graie mare will still prouce the better horse.*  
Es mas el ruido, que las nuezes. *verbatim. The noise is greater then the nuts. i. More afraid then hurt.*  
Dos pardáles en vna espiga, házen mala liga. *verbatim. Two sparrowes on one eare of cozne make an ill agreement. i. Two competitozs cannot accorde.*  
No es tan bravo el León como le pintan. *verbatim. The Lion is not so fierce as they paint him. i. He is such a one as he makes hewe of.*  
En hora buena nace, quien buena fama cóbra. *verbatim. He is bozne in a good houre that gets him- selfe a good name. i. A good name is better then riches.*  
De baxo de mala capa, yaze buen bevedór. *verbatim. Under a bad cloake lies a good drinker. i. The wozse outwardly attired, the better inwardly lined.*  
Derábo de puerco, nunca buen virote. *verbatim. Of a pigges tale you can neuer make a good shaft. i. Wzap a sole in a moister you cannot make him leane his follie: a clowne will neuer be made a king.*  
Que es esse hidalgo? El que haze las obras. *verbatim. What is this gentleman. i. Who is to be a gen- tleman: Euen he that doth the wozkes of a gentleman.*  
El año fuere la carga, no la sobre carga. *verbatim. The alle endureth his burden, but not moze then his burden.*  
Amenzados pán cómen. *verbatim. Threatened men cate bread. i. The threatened men liue long.*

Piénsa

Pienfa el ladrón, que todos son de su condición. *verbatim.* The these thinketh that all are of his condition. *i.* Carre one iudgeth another by himselfe.  
 Mas vale vn tóma que dos te daré. *verbatim.* One hold is better then two I will giue thee. Once giuing is better then often promising.  
 No se gana camóra en vn hora. *verbatim.* camóra (a strong towne) is not wonne in an hower. *i.* Rome was not built in a day.  
 Quién tiempo tiene, y tiempo ariende, tiempo viene, que se arrepiente. *verbatim.* He that hath time, and looks for better time, time comes that he repent himselfe of time.  
 Buen coraçon quebranta mala ventura. *verbatim.* A good hart breaketh ill hap. *i.* A good hart overcometh all.  
 Mundo redondo quién no sabe nadár vafe en hondo. *verbatim.* Round world, he that cannot swim let him sink to the bottome.  
 Malas son las búrlas verdaderas. *verbatim.* True iesses are ill. *i.* It is ill to iest at that which was done in deed.  
 Quién te haze físta, que no lo suéle hazér, o te quiere engañar, o te ha menester. *verbatim.* Who so maketh much of thee that was not wont, either will deceiue or stands in neede of thee.  
 Quién a solas come el gallo, a solas ensilla su caválo. *verbatim.* Whosoeuer eates the cocke alone, saddles the horse alone. *i.* He that will keepe his meate and his money to himselfe, must doe his busines himselfe.  
 Haz bien y no cates a quién, haz mal y guárte. *verbatim.* Doe good and regard not to whom, doe euill and take heed of thy selfe.  
 Quién a buen árbol se arrima buena sombra le cobija. *verbatim.* Whosoeuer leaneth to a good tree, getteth a good shadow. *i.* Whosoeuer hath a sure man to trust vnto, hath a great pleasure.  
 Quien no parecee peréce. *verbatim.* Who appeareth not, perisheth. *i.* Out of sight, out of minde.  
 Biva conmigo y búscá quien te mantenga. *verbatim.* Live with me, and seeke some other that may maintaine thee. *i.* Doe me seruice, and get maintenance where thou canst.  
 Hónra y provecho, no caben en vn fäco. *verbatim.* Honour and profit are not contained together in one sacke. *i.* If you be honozable, you must be liberrall and not respect your money.  
 Quien quita l'ocasión, quita el pecádo. *verbatim.* He that taketh awaie the occasion, taketh awaie the offence. *i.* He that remoueth the allurements, taketh awaie the sinne.  
 La pobreza no es vileza mas inconveniencia. *verbatim.* Pouertie is no vile or vitious matter, but get an inconuenience.  
 Las cuántas en la máno, y el diábulo en el capillo. *verbatim.* The beades in the hand, and the diuill in his capuch or cape of his cloake. *i.* God in his mouth and the diuill in his hart: good wordes and wicked deedes.  
 Palabras y plúmas el viento las lleua. *verbatim.* Wordes and feathers the winde carrieth away. *i.* Wordes are but winde.  
 Ni Sávado sin sol ni moça sin amor, ni véjo sin dolor. *verbatim.* Neither Saboath without sunne, nor young wench without loue, nor an old body without griefe or ache.  
 Fuego de estopa, Fire of strawe,  
 Amor de púta, Loue of a queane,  
 Viento del culo, Winde from the taile,  
 Todo es vno, All is one.

De yra de Señor y de alboroto de pueblo.  
 De locos en lugar estrecho,  
 De honra menguada, y gente que no tiene nada.  
 De moça adeuina, y mugér latina.  
 De persona señalada, y de Biúda tres veces casada.  
 De lódos al caminár, y de luenga enfermedad.  
 De viento que entre per horádo, y de enemigo que sea reconciliado.  
 De madrastra, el nombre le basta.

Of the wrath of a mightie man & the tumult of the people.  
 Of mad foles in a narrow place.  
 Of credit decayed, and people which haue nothing.  
 Of a young wench a prophessee, and a latin woman.  
 Of a person marked, & a widow thise married.  
 Of fowle durtie waies and long sicknesses.  
 Of wind that comes in at a hole, and of a reconciled enemy.  
 Of a stepmother, the very name of her sufficeth.

F f N f S.

# PLEASANT and DELIGHTFVLL DIALOGVES IN SPANISH

and English, profitable to the learner,  
and not vnpleasant to any  
other Reader.

By IOHN MINSHEU Professer  
of Languages in  
London.

*Uirescit vulnere Virtus.*



Imprinted at London, by  
Edm. Bollifant.

1599

*Al muy illustre Señor, Don Eduardo Hobby:  
su aficionado servidor Juan Minshen  
deséa salud, y perpetua felicidad.*



*V*y illustre Señor, de aquel famoso pintor Apeles se cuenta, que aviendo acabado de pintar una hermosa tabla, temiendola colgada en parte pública; innumerable gente de todas suertes conbiada de la lindeza della, suspendieron su curso, y se detuvieron a contemplarla, entre los de mas, se acertó a llegar un rústico labrador, y como todos alabassen grandemente el ingenio del artista, juntamente con la pintura: el villano con voz ronca y mal compuesta, dixo, una gran falta tiene ésta tabla; lo qual como oyese Apeles, le preguntó qual fuese ésta? El respondió, aquella espiga sobre la qual está aquel páxaro sentado, deviera estar mas inclinada, porque conforme al peso que presupone el páxaro y la fluidez de la caña, no podía sustentárse sin doblarse mas, oyó esto por el pintor, vió que tenía razón el villano; y tomando el pincel, emendó luego aquella falta, siguiendo su parecer; sobérbio pues el rústico con ver que se uviese tomado su voto, pasó mas adelante, y dixo, aquellos çapatos que aquella figura tiene no están buenos, a esto le respondió Apeles, Hermano cura de tu arte, y dexa a cada uno el suyo. Está figura, muy illustre señor, he querido traer, por dezir, que si todos los hombres se conformassen con lo que säuen y que su ingenio alcanza, no quisiesen pasar adelante, a saber lo que no es de su profesión ny les toca, ny ellos quedarían corridos, como éste villano, ni el labrador se entremetería a tratar de la guerra, ny el mercader de la cavallería, ny el oficial de las sciencias, ny el herrero se pondría a disputar puntos de teología; Sino que tratando cada uno aquello a que su capacidad se estienae, y no mas, sería un concierto maravilloso; que resultaría en grande utilidad de toda la república, y para esto devríamos tomar exemplo en las cosas naturales, las quales perpetuamente guardan su orden y concierto, sin entremetérse las unas a hazer el oficio de las otras, y así vemos que ny la tierra calienta, ny el fuego produce, ny el viento riega, ny el agua ventea, sino que cada cosa tiene su calidad, y oficio particular. Pues aviendo se de guardár éste concierto y orden, a v. m. conviene y toca el juzgar de ésta mi obra, como aquel que entre todos los demas, tiene el primado de la lengua Española, segun la facilidad con que se le a dado, y la perfeccion con que la habla, però tambien en otras muchas sciencias, y facultades, en que v. m. resplandee sobre todos los de nuestro tiempo. Aquí no es de olvidar la resplandente, rara y acabada perfeccion en hermosura, doctrina, lenguas, de la muy illustre Señora Doña Margarita su muger de v. m. Dios sabe, si yo quisiera dedicárle toda la obra entera y no partida en parte, (pues quando no uviera las razones dichas para hazerlo; bastava el agradecimiento y benevolencia; que v. m. mostró al que primero emprendió lo que he yo ampliado, y hecho mas copioso: Però el lo dexado de hazer, por dos razones amy juyzio; la una es la obligacion precisa que tengo a las personas a quien va dirigida, no solo de obediencia y amistad, sino tambien de ayuda, favor, y socorro, que me han dado para poder llegarla a su fin; y la otra razón es, a ver se comenzado, proseguido,



The Epistle Dedicatorie.

quido y acobado en su nombre, y para que se apovéchan della, en su ministerio. Però ya que lo que es mayor en cantidad tengo empleado, lo que es yqual en calidad, o fresco y dedico a v.m. y esto mas por lo que a mi importa, pues quedare seguro que los detractores no osen morder en lo que ha sido censurado por tan primo juyzio y entendimiento, que no por la gloria o utilidad que dello se podra seguir a v.m. ultra de que con esto satisfaga en parte la deuda de agradecimiento, que devo a quien con tanta voluntad favorece a mi profesion, oficio verdaderamente proprio de hombres sabios y discretos, asi como es de ygnorantes y poco menos que bestias, el impedir semejantes exercicios lo qual no cabe sino en hombres gruesos de entendimiento, y de conciencias, Suplico a v.m. se sirva de recibir esso pequeño servicio, aunque con grande voluntad ofrecido, y poner lo debaxo de su proteccion y amparo, pues con esto, la obra quedara segura, y yo tambien lo estare, de que está bien empleada: y tomare á las para emprender mayores cosas en nombre de v.m. Cuya muy ilustre persona, nuestro señor guarde con acrecentamiento de mayores estados.

Bé las manos de v.m. su servidór,

JOHN MINSHEU.

Diálogo priméro para levantárse por la mañana y las cosas a ello pertenecientes, entre un hidálgo llamado don Pedro y su criado Alonso, y un su amigo llamado don Juan, y una ama.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| D.P. O Yes moço?   | P. Y Outh, dost thou heare?  |
| A. Señor.  | A. Sir.  |
| d.P. Que ora es?   | P. What is it of the clocke?   |
| A. Las cinco son dadas.  | A. It hath strooken five.  |
| d.P. Levántate y abre aquella ventána a vér si es de dia.                  | P. Rise, and open that window, to see if it be day.                                      |
| A. Aun no es bien amenecido.   | A. It is not yet breake of the day.  |
| d.P. Pues asno, como dixiste que ha dado las cinco?                        | P. Why then assehead, why saidst thou that it had strooke five a clocke.                 |
| A. Señor las cinco yo las conté, però el relóx y la mañana no andan a una. | A. Sir, I told you five, but the clocke and the morning goe not together.                |
| d.P. O tu mientes o el relóx miente, que el sol no puede mentir.           | P. Either thou liest, or the clocke lieth, for the sunne cannot lie.                     |
| A. Mas vale que miento yo, que no el año.                                  | A. It is better that I lie, then the yeere proove out ill.                               |
| d.P. Que día haze?   | P. What weather is it?   |
| A. Señor nublado.  | A. Sir cloudie weather.  |
| d.P. En los ojos déves tu de tener las nubes que el cielo yo le véo claro. | P. Belike thine eies be cloudie, for I see the skie cleere.                              |
| A. Pues no estoy ciego.  | A. Yet am I not blinde.  |
| d.P. Antes créo que estas durmiendo toda vía.                              | P. Rather I beleene thou standest sleeping.  |
| A. Sé, que no soy elefante que tengo de dormirme en pie.                   | A. I knowe, I am not elephant to sleepe standing.  |
| d.P. Haze frío?  | P. Is it cold weather?   |
| A. Vn cerceganillo entra por la ventána que corta las narízes.             | A. Here comes in such a colde northerly winde at the windowe, that it bites off my nose. |
| d.P. Dáme de vestir que me quéro levantar.                                 | P. Give me my clothes, for I will rise.  |
| A. A que, tan de mañana?   | A. What to doe so early?   |
| d.P. A negociár, que tengo mucho que hazer oy.                             | P. To goe about busines, for I haue much to doe to day.                                  |
| A. Aun no estará nadie en pie.   | A. No bodie will be yet stirring.  |
| d.P. Tu adivinas a tu provecho.  | P. Thou dost prophesie for thine owne behoofe.   |
| A. Que vestido se quiere poner vuestra merced?                             | A. What apparell will you weare to day Sir?  |
| d.P. El de velarte, que dizen que es honray provecho.                      | P. That of the fine blacke cloth, for it is of estimation and profitable.                |
| A. Que jubón?  | A. What doublet?   |
| d.P. El de ráfo pespuntado.  | P. That of stitched fatten.  |
| A. He le aquí.   | A. Here it is.   |
| d.P. * Majadéro, pues el jubon me tráces,                                  | P. Blocke head, dost thou bring me my doublet  |

## Diálogos.

es, ántes que la camisa, quiéres  
me molejar de ajetado.

\* Those that be  
whipped, put on  
their doublets  
in haste before  
their shirts, to  
save them from  
another lash.

- A. Aun no ha traydo las camisas la  
labandera.  
d.P. Pues, hídela puta y d por ellas.  
A. \* Al Ruyn de Roma, quando le  
nómbra, luego aforma, aquí  
viene ya la labandera.  
d.P. Está enxiuta?  
A. Como vn cucino.  
d.P. No os he dicho, que no me tray-  
gays estas comparaciones.  
A. \* Esto fuera, Si fuera, v.m. persona  
Sospechofa que no se a de men-  
tar la fogá, en casa del ahor-  
cado.  
d.P. Dame las calças de terciopelo a-  
cuchilladas.  
A. Aquí están señor.  
d.P. Están limpias? mira bien si tienen  
algun punto suelto las medias.  
A. Esta es vna de las tres cosas que  
Ganafa dezia, que el hombre  
busca con gran cuydado, y  
quando las ha hallado le péla.  
d.P. Y quales son las de mas?  
A. Vna suziedad en la cama, y los cu-  
ernos, si tu muger se los pone,  
pero estas sanas están.  
d.P. Calçame las, dame el fayo de ve-  
larte, quel de raxa es muy del-  
gado para este frio que haze.  
A. Quiere, v.m. ponérse borzegui-  
es?  
d.P. No sino çapatos y pantúflos, por  
amor del lodo: Dame primero  
aguamános.  
A. Señor el agua está elada en el jar-  
ro.  
d.P. Buena señal. A. De que señor? d.P.  
de Carábanos.  
A. Ya un de que haze frio.  
d.P. Derrítelo en el brasero, dame en-  
tre tanto el espejo y vnastixé-  
ras que quiero adereçarme la  
barva.  
A. Aquí está el estuche donde está  
todo, y tambien el péyne.  
d.P. O que de canas tengo, ya me voy  
parando

## Dialogues.

doublet before my shirt, wilt thou  
scoffe me as though I had beene  
whipped?

- A. The laundresse hath not yet brought  
home the shirts.  
P. Whoorsonne knave, go then for them.  
A. Lupus est in fabula, as soone as one  
names him presently he appears,  
here comes the laundresse.  
P. Is it drie?  
A. As drie as a horne.  
P. Have I not told thee, that thou bring  
me no such comparisons.  
A. That is true, if you were a person suscep-  
ted, for a man ought not to make  
mention of a halier in the house of  
a man that was hanged.  
P. Give me my pained velvet hose.  
A. Here they are sir.  
P. Be they made cleane? Look well if the  
stockings have any stitches bro-  
ken in them.  
A. This is one of the three things which  
Ganafa said a man seeks dili-  
gently after, and when he hath  
found them it grieues him.  
P. And what are the other two?  
A. Filth in the bed one lieth in, and hornes  
if they be of his owne wines graf-  
ting, but these stockings are whole.  
P. Pull them on, give me that ierkin of  
blacke cloth, for that of thin cloth  
rash is very thin for this cold wea-  
ther.  
A. Will you weare buskins?  
P. No, but pumpe and pantofles because of  
the durt: Give me first water to  
wash my hands.  
A. Sir, the water is frozen in the pot.  
P. A good signe. A. Of what sir? P. Of  
ice.  
A. And also that it is cold.  
P. Thaw it in the pan of coales, in the  
meane while give me the looking  
glasse and cissors, for I will trim  
my beard.  
A. Here is the case where all are in it, and  
likewise the corbe.  
P. O what hoare haires I have, I begin to  
waxe

## Diálogos.

parando véjo.

- A. Señor, las navidades nose van en  
bálde.  
d.P. Por cierto no tengo muchas, sino  
\* como dizen en mi tierra, cá-  
nas y cuernos no vienen por  
días.  
A. Ya está buena esta agua, bien se  
puede vuestra merced lavar.  
d.P. Pues dadá la fuente, y la toalla.  
A. Quiere, v.m. Llevar capay gorra o  
herrucllo y sombrero?  
d.P. No es aora tiempo de gorra, dame  
el herrucllo largo, y vn som-  
brero de fieltro.  
A. Que espada? Dorada, plateada o  
Pavonada?  
d.P. No la quiero, sino enbarnizada por  
filloviere, Mira quien llama a la  
puerta.  
A. El señor don Juan es.  
d.P. Corre abre presto.  
d.I. Muy buenos dias dé Dios. a v.m.  
Señor don Pedro.  
d.P. O señor don Juan. v.m. sea tan bien  
\* venido como los buenos años:  
como está v.m?  
d.I. Muy al servicio de v.m. v.m. está  
bueno?  
d.P. Al servicio de v.m. como estuvié-  
re, aunque algo achacoso.  
d.I. Pues porque madruga tanto sino  
anda bueno?  
d.P. Porque dizen los médicos que pa-  
ra la salud, es bueno levantár de  
mañana.  
d.I. Esta salud ténganse la ellos, que pa-  
ra mi estos son los dias que de-  
vémos metér en casa como di-  
ze el Refrán, o que los tengá-  
mos en la cama, dixérame mejor.  
d.P. Para dezir la verdad, yo mas lo há-  
go, por entender en mis nego-  
cios.  
d.I. Como le va a v.m. dellos?  
d.P. Señor al servicio de v.m. mal ben-  
dito sea Dios.  
d.I. Como así no despachan a v.m?  
d.P. Si Señor despéchanme. Mucácho  
tráe nos de almorzar antes  
que salgamos.

d.I. Ya

## Dialogues.

waxe olde.

- A. Sir, yeees passe not over ones head in  
vaine.  
P. Truly, I have not many yeees on my  
backe, but as they say in my coun-  
trie, Hoare haires, & hornes come  
not by age.  
A. This water is now well, you may now wel  
wash Sir.  
P. Then give beere the basen and jewels,  
and the towell.  
A. Will you weare a short cloake and cap,  
or long cloake and hat?  
P. It is no weather now for a cap, give me  
a long cloake and a felt hat.  
A. What rapier, gilt, silvered, or sangui-  
ned?  
P. None, but that varnish rapier, least it  
should raine: Go looke who knockes  
at the doore.  
A. It is master Iohn.  
P. Run, open the doore quickly.  
I. God give you good morowe master Pe-  
ter.  
P. Oh master Iohn, you are as well wel-  
come as good fortune: how do you  
Sir?  
I. Readie to do you service, and are you  
well Sir?  
P. Howsoever Sir, at your command al-  
though now I am not halfe well.  
I. Why then do you rise so early, if you be  
not well?  
P. Because Physicians saie, that for ones  
health it is good to rise early in  
the morning.  
I. That health let them have themselves  
for me, these be the gooddaies (as  
the Proverbe saith) which wee  
ought to locke up within our dores,  
nay (I should say) within our beds.  
P. To tell you the truth, I do it chiefly to  
follow my busines.

- I. How goeth it with you in your busines?  
P. Sir at your command, but ill enough God  
be thanked.  
I. How do they not dispatch you?  
P. Yea Sir, they despise me. Boie, give us  
somen hat to breakefast before we  
go forth.

k 2

I. I

- d.I. Ya yo he bevido vna vez.  
 d.P. Beverá. v. m. otra que no le hará mal.  
 d.I. \* No, que no soy tan delicado como judío en vicnes.  
 A. Que quieren vs. ms. almorzar.  
 d.P. Tráe vnos pastles y vn quartillo de cabrito asado.  
 d.I. Que bien adereçado tiene. v. m. este aposento señor don P.  
 d.P. Señor Razonable como para vn hidálgo pobre.  
 d.I. De donde uvo. v. m. ésta tapicería?  
 d.P. Señor; de Flandes vino.  
 d.I. Tambien deven desfer de alla los lienços o pinturas o Retratos?  
 d.P. Algunos dellos, otros son de Ytalia.  
 d.I. De gentil máno ion por cierto: quanto le costó. a v. m. este escritorio?  
 d.P. Mas que vale, quarenta ducados.  
 d.I. De que madera es?  
 d.P. La colorada es caoba de la Havána y ésta negra es évano, la blanca es martil.  
 d.I. Cierito que está muy curióso, y muy bien asentada la taracá.  
 d.P. Aquí verá. v. m. vn bufete mejor labrado.  
 d.I. Adonde fue hécho?  
 d.P. El y las sillas viniéron de Salamanca.  
 d.I. Lomejor le falta a v. m. en este aposento.  
 d.P. Que es, por vida del Señor don Juan?  
 d.I. Por lo que dezía don Juan Manuel, un fonezito de chapín.  
 d.P. Ya entiendo, por la muger lo dize v. m.  
 d.I. Por la misma.  
 d.P. Anime parece que lomejor que tiene es estár sin ella.  
 d.I. \* O Señor no diga. v. m. esto que es triste cosa la soledad.  
 d.P. \* A tengo me al que dize, que Vale mas solo que mal acompañado.

d.I. Pues

- I. I have already eaten a bit.  
 P. One bit more will doe you no harme.  
 I. No, for I am not so curious as the Jewe on a Friday.  
 A. What will your worships breake your fast withall?  
 P. Bring a pie, and a quarter of a roasted kidde.  
 I. Oh how well in order haue you this lodging M. Peter?  
 P. Sir reasonable for a poore gentleman.  
 I. From whence had you this tapestrie hangings?  
 P. Sir it came from Flanders.  
 I. And from thence also came these pictures and portraitures?  
 P. Some of them did, others came from Italye.  
 I. Truly they are of a fine workmans doing. What cost this deske or caske?  
 P. More then it is worth fortie ducates.  
 I. Of what wood is it?  
 P. The red is \* Caoba of Havána, and this blacke is Ebonie, and the white is Iuorie.  
 I. Truly it is very curious, and the inlaying of the wood most finely set in.  
 P. Here may you see a standing table, better wrought.  
 I. Where was it made?  
 P. That and the chaires came from Salamanca.  
 I. The best thing is yet wanting in this lodging.  
 P. What is it I praie you hartlie master Iohn?  
 I. That which don Iohn Manuel saide, the gentle sound of a womans shoe.  
 P. Now I vnderstande you meane a wife?  
 I. Euen the selfe same.  
 P. It seemes unto me, that the best thing my lodging hath is to be without hir.  
 I. Oh Sir, saie not so, solitarie is vnplesant.  
 P. Ab Sir, I stande to that old saying, better alone then euill accompanied.

I. But

- d.I. Pues no se entiendo que a de ser mala.  
 d.P. Y adónde le hallaríamos que sea buena?  
 d.I. Muchas ay muy buenas.  
 d.P. Es verdad, las que están enterradas.  
 d.I. De suerte que quiere. v. m. dezir que la muger estonçes es buena quando está muerta.  
 d.P. Digo señor que cada loco con su tema, yo he dado a ora en ésta.  
 d.I. \* Y se faldrá. v. m. con ella, como el Rey con sus alcaválas.  
 d.P. \* Se dize que una buena mula, y vna buena cabra, y vna buena muger son tres, malas cucas.  
 A. La mesa está puesta bien se pueden sentar. vs. ms. a almorzar.  
 d.P. Señor don Juan tome. vs. ms. aquella cabeçera.  
 d.I. Bueno sería, esto es per motejar-me de viejo.  
 d.P. No, si no por cumplir con la razón.  
 d.I. V. m. tome su lugar que yo tomaré el mio.  
 d.P. Bueno es que venga a mi casa, quien mande en ella mas que yo.  
 d.I. O si por ay lo echa. v. m. yo obedesco en su casa y fuera.  
 d.P. Yo soy el que tengo de servir como la razón me obliga. Muchacho dáca platos.  
 A. Aquí están Señor.  
 d.P. De adonde truxiste estos pastles?  
 A. De la mas limpia pastelera que ay en la ciudad.  
 d.P. Son de nuestra vezina la hermosa?  
 A. Si Señor.  
 d.P. Bien los puede. v. m. comer sin asco que ne muger limpia son.  
 d.I. Mas que nunca lo fueran, nunca yo miro en misérias.  
 d.P. Pues menos mirára, si fuera tan amigo de ellos como yo.  
 d.I. Muy bien me saben, y lo mejor que yo les hallo es ser comida  
 I. But you must not vnderstande of a bad wife.  
 P. And where shall we finde hir that is good?  
 I. There are many very good.  
 P. It is true, they which are dead and buried.  
 I. So that you will say, that a woman is then good, when she is dead.  
 P. I say Sir, that euery foole hath his wilfulnessse, and I haue lighted now vpon this.  
 I. And you shall as easily carrie it away as the \* king doth his subsidies. \* without contentment.  
 P. It is said, that a good mule, a good goat, and a good woman are three vnhappie creatures.  
 A. The table is covered, your worships may well sit downe to breakefast.  
 P. M. Iohn, sit you downe at the upper end of the table.  
 I. It should doe well in deede, that is a floute because I am olde.  
 P. Not so, but to doe you right.  
 I. Take you your place and I will take mine.  
 P. It is very good, that I should haue such a guest as should command more in my house then my selfe.  
 I. Oh Sir if you take it so, I not onely obey you in your house, but abroad also.  
 P. Sir I am to be at your seruice, as reason bindeth mee. Boie giue mee dishes heere.  
 A. Heere they are Sir.  
 P. From whence didst thou fetch these pies?  
 A. From the cleanliest piewife, that is in the citie.  
 P. What from our faire neighbour?  
 A. Yea Sir.  
 P. Well may you eate Sir of them without loathing, for they are from a cleanly woman.  
 I. And if they were not, I neuer sticke for small matters.  
 P. Lesse woulde you stande vpon it, if you did loue them as I doe.  
 I. They please my taste well, and the best is that I alwaies finde them to bee a  
 meat

\* Caoba, a fine red wood in the Indies, of which they make checker worke and other curious works in cupboards, &c.

tan acorrida, que a qual quier, ora, que el hombre la quiera la halla guisada.

d.P. Muchácho da nos de bever que pícala pimienta.

Al. Que quiere, v.m. blanco o tinto?

\* Tinto is a wine in Spaine red & blackish.

d.P. Echa de lo blanco, que es mas caliente para por la mañana.

d.I. Y aun es mas saludable que lo tinto.

d.P. Brindo a v.m. Señor don Juan.

d.I. Befo, a, v.m. las manos, hare la razon.

Al. Por qual taça quiere, v.m. bever, por la Llana o por esta hon-dilla.

d.I. Alonfo amigo, avéis de fabér que yo soy muy buen borrácho y fe muy bien lo que me bevo, por ello echaldme por aquella taça llana.

d.P. Yo guito mas de bever por esta copa de vidrio que no por ninguna de las taças.

d.I. \* Señor, contra guistos no ay disputa.

d.P. Antes verdad, con esta pierna de cabrito beverá, v.m. otra vez, y trae vn as acitunas para la tercera.

d.I. Esta ya se llamará comida y no almuerzo.

d.P. Porque?

d.I. Porque dizen a buen coméro mal comér, tres vezes se a de bever.

d.P. Ay dize nuestra madre celestina \* que está corrupta la letra que por dezir treze dixo tres.

d.I. Ahora señor bien está lo hecho, no mas que perderemos la gana de el comér.

d.P. den nos a bever otras fendas de la calabriada.

d.I. Adonde yrcimos?

d.P. Lo primero a la yglesia, y encomendár nos a Dios.

d.I. \* Está muy bien, que por yra la yglesia ni dar çevada, no se pierde jornada.

d.P. çierra

meate so in readines, that at what soeuer bower a man will haue it he may finde it ready drest.

P. Boy giue vs drinke, for the pepper bites.

A. Which will you haue sir, sacke or \* tinto?

P. Fill out of the sacke, for it is more heating chiefly for the morning.

I. And also is more wholesome then the red.

P. I drinke to you master Iohn.

I. I thanke you sir, I will pledge you.

A. In which cup will your worship drinke, in the plaine bowle, or in the little deepe one.

I. Friend Alonso you must knowe, that I am a very good drinke, and know how much I use to drinke, wherefore fill me that plaine bowle.

P. I like better to drinke out of this drinke glass than out of any other of the cups.

I. Sir, against ones liking there is no disputing.

P. It is so Sir: this leg of kid will make you once againe haue a quarrell to the cup. Bring vs some olives for the third course.

I. This is to be called a dinner and not a breakefast.

P. Why?

I. Because to a good meale or a bad, three draughts onely are to be had.

P. Alas saith our mother Celestine, the letter is corrupted, for whereas he should haue said thirteene, he set downe three.

I. Well Sir, it sufficeth, we haue eaten well, no more, for we shall loose our stomacks to eate at dinner.

P. Let them giue to each of vs once againe of the \* Calabriada.

I. Whither shall we goe?

P. First to the Church, to commend our selues to God.

I. It is very good, for neither in going to the Church, nor in giuing prouender to thy horse, was there ever iourney hindered or lost.

P. Shut

d.P. çierra aquel cofre, pon en cobro estas baratijas, llama al áma que barra y componga este aposento.

Al. Tengo de yr acompañando a v.m.

d.P. No, sino quedate en casa, ayúda al áma y limpia todos mis vestidos y ponedla en orden y a las onze llevame el cavallo a palacio.

Al. Está muy bien Señor, yo lo haré así.

d.P. \* cite mi criado Señor don Juan, es como malilla que hago de ello que quiero.

d.I. Y aun anda, v.m. en lo çierto para ser bien seruido, que quando hombre tiene muchos criados, unos por otros nunca hazen cosa a deréchas.

d.P. El me sirve de mayordomo, de repostero, de maestro sala, de guarda ropa, de paje, y de lacayo, y a vezes de despensero.

d.I. El parece buen hijo.

d.P. Bueno señor es tan bueno que a ser mas, no valiera nada, sola vna falta tiene.

d.I. Qual es?

d.P. \* Que es grandísimo enemigo de el agua.

d.I. E'fio hará lo, por el bien que le sabe el vino, pero éssa no se puede llamar falta, si no sobra.

d.P. Muchácho çierra la puerta, con la \* llave, que a puerta çerrada el Diabolo se buelue.

Al. Ama, tráyga vn caldéro de agua y vna cícoba, regarémos y barrarémos éste aposento.

Ama. Toma primero éssa ropa blanca que tráxo la labandera.

Al. Aguarde, facaré la memoria para ver si falta algo.

Am. Adonde la tienes?

Al. Aquí está en mi faltriquera.

Am. Lee la pues.

Al. Memoria de la ropa de mi ámo que llevó la lavandera en diez de março de 1599. primera-mente quatro camisas con sus cuellos

P. Shut that chest, put up safe this household stuffe, call the nurse that sweepes and dresse this lodging.

A. Shall I waite on your sir?

P. No, but tarry in the house, helpe the nurse and brush all my apparel and set the house in order, and at eleven of the clocke bring my horse to the court.

A. Verie well sir, I will doe it.

P. This my seruant master Iohn is as the \* Malilla, for I make of him what I will.

I. And thereby you are sure to be well serued, for when a man hath many seruants, one by reason of the other neuer doe that they ought.

P. He serueth me for steward of my house, for a gentleman-usher, wardrop keeper, page, and for lacquey, and sometimes for cater.

I. He seemes to be an honest fellow, a good fellow or good seruant.

P. Good Sir, so good he is, that if he were better, he were worth nothing, onely one fault he hath.

I. What is that?

P. That he loues no water by no means.

I. That is for the good he findes in wine, but this cannot be called a want in him, but a superfluitie.

P. Boy, locke the doore with the key, for at a locked doore, the diuell himselfe goeth his way.

A. Nurse, bring a kettle of water and a broome, we will cast water on, and sweep this chamber.

N. Take first this cleane linnen which the laundresse brought home.

A. Stay a little, I will take out the note to see if any thing be wanting.

N. Where is it?

A. Heere it is in my pocket.

N. Reade it then.

A. A note of my masters clothes which the laundresse had the tenth of March, 1599. First fower shirts, with their russe bands

eucllos de lechuguilla.

Am. Aquí están A. dos tabanas, dos almohadas de cama, dos pares de calzones de lienzo, tres de calçetas.

A. Aquí están.

Al. Vna dozena de pares de escarpines.

Am. No ay aquí mas que ocho.

Al. Pues quatro faltan a la labandera pedirle he que de cuenta dellos, y si ella los perdio que los pague.

Am. Anda, que valen quatro escarpines viejos y rotos?

Al. Yten mas dos escobetas y quatro tocadores, media dozena de pañizucos de narizes.

Am. Aquí está todo.

Al. Dos mesas de mantiles, y diez servillitas.

Am. Aquí están.

Al. Tres toallas, y vn frutero, y dos cucillos de encaje con sus puños.

Am. Todo está aquí que nada falta.

Al. Pues dóblémoslo, y pongámoslo en el arca.

Am. Como me llamás para que os ayude a esto, no me llamárades para que os ayudara al almuerzo.

Al. Allí tengo guardados vnos escamochos que sobrarán a mi amo.

Am. Quiero primero barrer ésta sala y adereçarla.

Al. Entre tanto limpiaré yo la ropa, save de la escobilla?

Am. Vella allí colgada de aquel clávo, que si fuera perro ya te uiviera mordido.

Al. O quanto polvo tiene ésta capa?

Am. Sacude la primero con vna vára.

Al. Ama, mas que bien hechos están estos calçones?

Am. Tambien entiendo yo de esto, como puerca de freno.

Al. Pues que entiende?

Am. Al lo que a mi me importa si tu pregun-

to them.

N. Heere they are. Al. a paire of sheetes, twopillows, two paire of linnen breeches next the skin, three paire of linnen hose under the stockings:

N. Heere they are.

A. A dosen paire of sockes.

N. There are but eight heere.

A. Then fower wants, I will require of the laundresse that she giue account of them, and if she hath lost them that she paie for them.

N. Go, what are fower oldbroken sockes worth?

A. Also more, two night coifes and fower night kerchiefs, halfe a dosen of handkerchiefs.

N. Here is all.

A. Two table clothes and ten table napkins.

N. Here they are.

A. Three towels, and one \* fruite cloth and two ruffe bandes wrought with their ruffes at hand.

N. All is here, nothing is wanting.

A. Then let vs fold it, and let vs put it in the chest.

N. Wherefore call you me, that I should helpe you to do this, & would not cal me that I should helpe you to eate your breakfast?

A. There haue I saved certaine fragments which my Master left.

N. I will first sweepe this hall and dresse it.

A. In the meane while will I bruse the clothes: doe you knowe where the bruse is?

N. See there hanged vpon that naile, that if it were a beare it would now haue bit thee.

A. Oh what a deale of dust hath this cloke?

N. Beate it out first with a wand.

A. Nurse, how exceeding well are these breeches made.

N. I haue as good knowledge therein as a sowe in a bridle.

A. What haue you knowledge in then?

N. In that which belongeth vnto me, if thou

preguntáras por una basquiña, una saya entera, una ropa, un manto, o un cuerpo, una gorra, de una toca, y cosas semejantes, supiera te yo responder.

Al. De manera que no sabe léer, mas de por el libro de su aldea.

Am. Quieres tu, que sea yo, como el ymbidióso, que su cuidado es en lo que no le va ni le viene.

Al. Siempre es virtud saver, aunque sean cosas que parece que no nos ymportan.

Am. Bien sé yo, que tu sabrás hazer una bellaqueria, y ésta no es virtud.

Al. El saverla hazer no es malo, el usarla si.

Am. \* Siempre oy dezir que quien las sabe las tãic.

Al. \* No sino que quien ha las hechas ha las sospéchas.

Am. Pues vellaco que he hecho yo?

Al. No mas de hazérme regañar algunas vézes.

Ama. No me destu ocasión.

Al. Eltonces muchas merçedes, quando le doy ocasion, es menester que me perdóne, que quando no se la doy, poca amittad me haze.

Ama. A ora hermano dexate de retóricas y has lo que tu amo te mandó.

Al. Si haré aun que bien créo que no por ésto me tengo de ascntar con el ala mesa.

Ama. A lo menos escufarás de que el no te asiente en el rábo.

Al. Yo voy a enfillar el caválo, a dios paredes hasta la buelta.

thou hadst asked of a petticoate, a womans cassocke, a womans gowne, a mantell, a paire of bodies, a gorget, or a womans head attire, and like matters, I could haue answered thee.

A. So then the priest cannot say masse but in his owne booke.

N. Wilt thou, that I should be as the enuious person which setteth his minde on that which belongs not vnto him.

A. Yet alwaies it is a vertue to know, although they be things which seem not to appertaine vnto vs.

N. I know well, that thou knowest well how to play the knave, and that I am sure is no vertue.

A. To know how to doe it is not enill, but to use it it is enill.

N. I alwaies haue heard say, he that can play, plaies.

A. No but whoeuer is bad, hath suspition of another to be bad.

N. Why knaue what haue I done?

A. Nothing else, but make me fret and vex my selfe sometimes.

N. Doe not thou giue me occasion?

A. Then I thanke you hartily, when I giue you occasion it is necessarie that you pardon me, that when I giue you an occasion, you doe mee little \* wronge.

N. Now brother, leaue your rhetoricke, she doth not for- and doe that thy M. commanded thee.

A. So will I doe, although I beleue, for all that I am not to sit at table with him.

N. Thou must needs beare with that, for that he doth not set it on your bum.

A. I goe to saddle the horse, farewell vntill my returne.

\* Meaning then

give him any thing, seeing he maketh no of-

fence vnto her.

Diálogo segundo, en el qual, se trata de comprar y vender joyas y otras cosas entre un Hidalgo llamado Thomas, y su muger Margarita, y un Mercader y un Platero.

Th. A Donde queréis que vamos Señora?

Ma. Vámos a la platería, y compraremos algunas piezas de plata.

Th. Y de allí?

Ma. Yrémos a la lonja para comprar algunas cosas.

Th. En el nombre de Dios, entrémos en ésta tienda.

Ma. Plegue a el, sea con pie derecho.

Th. A Señor guarde Dios a v.m.

Pl. Y venga con vuestras mercedes.

Th. Mande nos mostrar, algunas buenas piezas.

Pl. Que géneros quiere v.m. tazas, copas o jarros, fuentes, platos, y escudillas, es lo mas necesario.

Th. Y tambien copas de salvo, y faléros, vinagéras.

Pl. Olamóço, saca aqui toda ésta plata de el arca.

Ma. Veamos aquellos candeleros y depaviladéras.

Th. Si estos brasérillos de mēca estuviéran sin celados fueran mejores.

Pl. Otros dicen, que la sin celadura es allegadero de mierda, hablando con perdón de vuestras mercedes.

Ma. No veo aquí agua manil ninguno.

Pl. Aquí está vno sobre dorado y sin celado con su fuente de la misma labor.

Th. Yo quisiera toda la baxilla de una misma labor que no diferenciáran vn as piezas de otras.

Pl. Por esto dicen, que tantas opiniones ay como cabeças: otros dicen que la variedad es la que agrada.

Th. Es verdad, pero la variedad ha de ser de cosas enteras, y por que hazer vna capa de remiendos, no puede agradar a nadie.

Pl. Conçierte

The second Dialogue, wherein is handled to buy and sell ierwels and other things, betwene a gentleman called Thomas and his wife Margaret, and a Merchant, and a goldsmith.

Th. Whither will you that wee goe Ladie?

Ma. Let vs go to the goldsmiths shops, and wee will buy some peeces of plate.

Th. And from thence whither?

Ma. We will go to the Exchange to buy some things.

Th. In the name of God let vs go into this shop.

Ma. I praye God it be in good time, luckily.

Th. Oh master goldsmith, God saue you.

Go. And God be in your companie.

Th. Canst thou shew vs some good peeces.

Go. What kinds will your worships see, plain cups, deep cups, or pots, ewers, platters, or dishes, all these are the most necessarie.

Th. And also cups with couers, and salt-sellers, and bottles for vinegar and oyle.

Go. Ho sirra, take out heere all this plate out of this cheest.

Ma. Let vs see these candlestickes and snuffers.

T. If those chafindishes for the table were engrauen they were better.

G. Others say, that the graving is a gathering of filth, speaking with reuerence of your worships.

M. I see no basen here.

G. Here is one gilt ouer, and graued with his ewer of the same worke.

T. I would haue all a cupboord of plate all of one worke, that there might not differ one peece from another.

G. Therefore they say, so many men so many mindes, others say varietie breeds delight.

T. It is true, but that varietie is to be of whole entrie things, by themselves, for to make a cloake with patches can please no bodie.

Go. Agree

# Diálogos.

Pl. Conçierte se v.m. conmigo en el preço, que yo se la daré acabada dentro de pocas días de la hechura que la quisiere.

Ma. Siempre en las tardanças ay peligro, y vale mas páxaro en mano que bueytre bolando.

Th. Pues escoja de ay v.m. les piezas que mas le agradáren.

Ma. Este salpimentero y ésta copa con su sobre copa, y éste pichel, y ésta caldereta, y ésta porcelána sean las priméras.

Th. A como hémos de dár por \* el marco de estas piezas?

Pl. Por el marco de las llanas me ha de dár v.m. a cien reales por las sin celadas, a quinze ducados y por las doradas a treynta ducados.

Th. Si el pedir fuera dár, no se avia hecho mala hazienda oy, pero de \* el dieho a el hécho ay gran trecho.

Pl. Al de menos no lo daré yo por lo, que v.m. me ha ofrecido hasta agora.

Th. Está tan caro, que yo no sé que le ofrezca si no es vna \* báxa.

Pl. Éssa yo la dançaré despues que v.m. aya tanido su álta.

Th. Mimas alta Señor, es a seis ducados la llána, y a cien reales, la sin celada, y la dorada, a veinte ducados.

Pl. Muy bien despachado y va yo, mas me tienen ami de cósta.

Th. Pues Señor torne a dançar a vér en que pára.

Pl. En cada género, le quitaré a v.m. dos ducados y no mas.

Th. Muy mal danço v.m. no le tóco mas.

Pl. Pues yo le aseguro a v.m. que no lo halle mas varato en la calle.

Th. Calle que si hallare, que donde vna \* puerta se cierra ciento se ábren.

Ma. Si ha de valer mi voto, dezir le he. Pl. Diga

# Dialogues.

Go. Agree with me for the price, and I will make it up for you within these few daies, of what fashion you will haue it.

M. Alwaies delays breede danger, and better a bird in hand then a vulture flying.

T. Then choose you out those peeces which best shall like you.

M. This salt and pepper boxe, and this cup with his couer, and this pot made ewer wise, and this kettle of silver, and this broad cup to drinke in are the best.

Th. What are we to paie for the halfe pound \* Marco de plata is worth

Go. For the halfe pounce of these plaine peeces your worship is to giue mee fiftie shillings, for the engraving fiftene ducates, and for the gilt thirtie ducates.

Th. If asking were giuing, you had not made an ill match to day, but there is a great distance betwixt the worde and the deede.

Go. At least I will not giue it for that you haue offered me as yet.

Th. You are so deere that I know not what I may offer for it, if there bee no \* A daunce so called. Also an abatement.

Go. That will I daunce after your worship hath strooke the treble.

Th. My highest is sixe ducates the plaine, and fiftie shillings the engrauen, and the gilt twentie ducates.

Go. This busines is wel dispatched now, they cost me more.

Th. But sir, come backe and daunce againe, to see upon what you sticke.

Go. In every kinde of them I will abate two ducates and no more.

Th. You daunce very ill, I plaie no more.

Go. But I assure your worship that you cannot finde better cheape in the streete.

Th. Holde your peace, for I will finde: for where one dore shuts a hundred do open.

Ma. If my voice may preuaile, ile strike the stroke. Go. Let

- Pl. Digale v.m. que le soy muy devoto. *Go. Let your worship speake on, for I am much deuoted.*
- Ma. Pues otro tanto como baxó el plato, suba el señor Tomás y no se hable mas. *Ma. Then so much as the goldsmith hath abated, so much let master Thomas rise, and let there be no more wordes.*
- Pl. Porque su palabra de v.m. no buelva atrás, &c. *Go. For that your worships worde may bee taken, &c.*
- Th. No quería v.m. mas, ora pefelo, pefar malo le dé dios a el diablo. *Th. You can desire no more, now waigh it, God giue ill waight to the diuell.*
- Pl. Lleven lo a cáfa que allá lo pefarémos. *Go. Carrie it to your house, there we will waigh it.*
- Th. Móço carga con today Lleva lo a cáfa. *Th. Sirra, take up all this and carrie it home.*
- Pl. Han de bolvér se luego vuestras merçedes? *Go. Are your worships to come backe againe this way by and by?*
- Th. No hasta de aquí a dosoras, que y'mos a comprar otras cosas. *Th. Not till within this two honers, for we goe to buy other things.*
- Pl. Si v.m. es servido de que le acompañe, hazer lo he. *Go. If it please you, that I go with you, I will.*
- Ma. Guarde Dios a v.m. que no querémos mas compañía. *Ma. God keepe you, we will no more companie.*
- Th. En ninguna cosa gasto el dinero, de mejor gana que en plata. *Th. In nothing I spend money with a better will then in plate.*
- Ma. Lo que se gasta en plata no es gastar, si no trocar pieças chicas por pieças grandes. *Ma. That which is laide out in plate is not wasted, but to change small peeces for great peeces.*
- Th. Y tambien por que cabe en ella lo que dizen que no cabe en un sacco que es honra y provecho. *Th. And also there is containd in it that they say is not contained in a sacke, which is honor and profit.*
- Ma. Si, por que si hombre le quiere servir con vidrio o china, o bárro, mas cuesta lo que se quiebra entre año que la hechura de la plata. *Ma. Yea, for if a man will serue his turne with glasse, or China mettall, or earth, that which is broken there of, costs more in a yeere then the fashion of the plate.*
- Th. Y con vna baxilla que hombre compra vna vez, tiene para hijos, niétos, y visniétos. *Th. And for a cupboord that a man buieth once, he is furnished for his children, nephewes, and nephewes children.*
- Ma. Aora vámos a la joyería. *Ma. Now let us goe to the place where they sell iewels.*
- Th. Esse es vn camino que yo hago de muy mala gana. *Th. This is a way that I goe unwillingly.*
- Ma. Porque razón? *Ma. What is the reason?*
- Th. Por que estas joyas son como las donzellas, que mientras están ençerradas son de mucho valor, y en sacando las fuera, le pierden todo y no valen nada. *Th. Because these iewels are as maidens, that while they are maidens and kept in, they are of much value, and in taking them abroad they loose all, and are worth nothing.*
- Ma. Si però, lo que se vía no se escufa. *Ma. Yea, but that which is a custome cannot be shunned, custome needes no excuse.*

Th. Al

Th. But

- Th. Al mal vfo quebrar le la pierna. *Th. But it is good to breake the legs of an ill custome.*
- Ma. No queráis señor poner vos puertas a el campo ni coregir el mundo, que así le hallastes y así le havéis de dexar. *Ma. I would not haue you Sir \* make doores \* i. to do things for the fields, and correct the whole world: for so you found it, and so shall you leave it.*
- Th. Ora pues corra ol rio por do fuele, pues se arendo la renta con estas condiciones. *Th. Why then let the river run where it was wont, seeing the thing was hired with these conditions.*
- Ma. Entrémos en esta tienda que es la mas rica. *Ma. Let us goe into this shop, for it is the richest.*
- Me. Que manda v.m. señor caualléro, que ha menester? *Me. What doth your worship command, what haue you neede of?*
- Th. Yo ninguna cosa, ésta señóra, muchas. *Th. I of nothing, this gentlewoman of many things.*
- Me. Pues pida su merçed, que todo se le dará aquí a muy buen preço. *Me. Then let her require what, and all shall be giuen her very good cheape.*
- Ma. Muestre me acá algunos tocados, guirnaldivas, rapósos, randas, deshilados, tocas de todas fuertes, y tan bien venga la olanda delgada, cambray, y otras fuertes de liencos. *Ma. Shew me some womens head attire, garland head attire, wifes of silver, bone worke or bone lace, stitched worke, head attire of all sorts, and also bring fine holland, cambrecke, and other sorts of linnen.*
- Me. Entre v.m. que todo lo verá aquí. *Me. May it please your worship come in, for you shall see all heere.*
- Ma. Todo esto es obra tosca mas \* prima la quiero. *Ma. All this is grosse worke, I would see \* Prima, i. chief, more principall.*
- Th. Para prima Señóra no es buena la hija de vuestro tío? *Th. Will not your uncles daughter serue you for a cozen?*
- Ma. Es muy gorda aquella, y por esso queria otra mas delgada. *Ma. This is very course, and therefore would I haue other finer.*
- Me. Pues en esta caxa verá. v.m. el primór del mundo, todo es obra de Milán. *Me. Then in this chest shall your worship see the principallest that is, all is worke of Milan.*
- Th. Obra de Milán veeme y no me tangas. *Th. Worke of Milan \* see me but touch me not.*
- Ma. Nada de esto me contenta. *Ma. None of these pleaseth me.*
- Me. Espanto me como se caló v.m. fiendo tan mal contentadiza. *Me. I wonder how your worship married being so diners to please your fancy.*
- Th. Fue por que vído a el nóbio de noche, y como dizen entonçes todos los gatos son pardos. *Th. It was because she saw the bridegroome by night, and as they saie, then all cats are greyeied.*
- Ma. Muestre me otra mejor obra si tiene, y dexese de preguntár quantos años tengo. *Ma. Shewe me some better worke, if you haue any, and leaue of to aske how old I am.*
- Me. Aora ésta es la última pruéva, ve aquí v.m. obra de argentería ve allí de aljófar, éstotra de abalório, y ésta de perlas, escoja como peras en tabáque. *Me. Now is the last triall, see heere worke of silver, there of small pearle, this other of blacke bugles, and this of pearle, choose out as peares in a basket.*
- Ma. Por cierto en ruin háto, poco ay que escojer. *Ma. Verily in a bad stocke, this is but a small choise.*

Me. A

I

Me. Call

\* Honor and profit is not held together in one bagge.

\* i. the fine dishes of earth painted such as are brought from Venice.

\* Prima, i. chief, principall or a shee cozen german.

\* Because they are coies, if you touch them they breake in peeces.



Me. A esto llama v.m. ruin, réo que es de peor condición que el filósofo Demócrito, que no halló cosa en el mundo que no tubiese falta.

Th. Eso sin Demócrito lo digo yo, que no ay cosa perfecta en el mundo.

Me. Eso verificarse ha, en cosas naturales, que en las de el arte puede aver perfección cada vna en su género.

Th. Pues que pensáis vos que es el arte, sino ymitador de la natura, y si en la natura no ay perfección menos la avrá en el arte su imitador.

Me. Yo señor no soy filósofo, ni quiero contender con v. m. mis mercaderías querria que tubiesen su perfección en el precio.

Ma. Sino le tienen en su valor, no le pueden tener en el precio.

Me. Ahora señora véa v.m. lo que mas le contenta, y tome lo que no tengo otra cosa mejor.

Ma. Este tocado, este cuello, ésta gargantilla de perlas, este regalillo, y este avanillo, ésta dos pares de guantes de flores, y ésta pretina, me parecen bien, todo lo de mas no.

Th. Quanto monta todo esto?

Me. Todo monta tres cientos reales.

Th. Tres cientos años está de vn lado quien tal diere.

Me. Pues por que no le alcance a v.m. ésta maldición dos cientos, y ochenta.

Th. No entiendo bien ésta cuenta.

Me. \* Dos veces ciento y quarenta.

Ma. Buena está la copla, no han de ser mas que dos cientos y cinquenta en todo.

Me. Con v. m. el perder es ganar, pues manda que se a anti, yo no hablaré mas palabra.

Th. Para que quiere hablar mas, si con las habladas ha hecho su agosto.

Me. Por cierto señor de este agosto, poca

Me. *Call you this bad, I beleue that you are of a worse condition then the Philosopher Democritus, which found nothing in the world, which had not a fault.*

Th. *I say this without Democritus, that there is nothing perfect in the world.*

Me. *This is to be verified in natural things, for in those things of arte, there may be perfection, euery thing in his kinde.*

Th. *Why what thinke you that arte is aie thing else but a follower of nature, and if nature hath not her perfection, much lesse shall there be aie in arte hir follower.*

Me. *Sir I am not a Philosopher, neither will I contende with your worship, I would my merchandizes had their perfection in the price.*

Ma. *If they haue it not in their worth, they cannot haue it in their price.*

Me. *Noue ladie, see that which best likes you, and take it, for I haue no better.*

Ma. *This kerchiefe, this bande, this neckelace of pearle, this muffle, and \* this faine, these two paire of gloves perfumed, and this girle likes me, all the rest I care not for.*

Th. *How much comes all this to?*

Me. *All comes to \* three hundred rials, or six pences.*

Th. *Let him lie three hundred yeeres on one side that should giue so much.*

Me. *Then because this curse may not light vpon you, giue two hundred and fower score.*

Th. *I vnderstand not well this reckoning.*

Me. *Twise a hundred, and twice fortie.*

Ma. *This copla is well, it should be no more then two hundred and fiftie in all.*

Me. *With your worship to lose is gaine, seeing you commaund so, I will not speake a word more.*

Th. *Why would you speake any more, if with that which is spoken you haue made your harvest.*

Me. *Truely sir, of this harvest I haue gotten*

ca cosecha he cogido.

Th. Señor si hiziera buena sementera cogiera mas.

Me. Aun tengo aqui otras muchas mercaderías muy curiosas que v.m. no ha visto.

Ma. Que son?

Me. Sartillas, joyces, cintas de resplandor, brocadetes, rodetes cosas de oro, arandelas, alcacuellos, gorgueras de red, camisas labradas, gargantillas de perlas, y ambar, todo género de afeite y de perfumes, véa v.m. si le contenta algo.

Ma. Otro dia vernemos mas de espacio para ver todo esto.

Th. Pareçeme señor que es vuestro oficio, como el de los torneros engaña muchachos y saca dineros.

Me. Pues es mi señora Margarita muchacho?

Th. Basta que sea engañada.

Me. Afe que no ha de faver poco quien la ha de engañar.

Th. Engañarle ha ella mesma a si misma.

Me. Como?

Sh. Dando dineros por estas bugerías que relúzen y no es oro todo, y quando váya a casa, se hallará con no nada entre dos platos.

Me. Para que es el dinero si no para luzirle con ello.

Th. Se que esto aunque relúze no lúze.

Ma. Ya os he dicho señor, que os vais al coriente de la de mas gente, y pues os cañastes como los otros pásia por donde los otros, no andeis por los estrémos que todo hombre estremado no está vn dedo de loco, éstas son cargas de el casamiento.

Th. La ayuda de el escaravájo que dexa la carga quanto le ayudan.

Ma. Ahora

ten but a little fruit.

Th. *If you had made your seede time better, you had reaped more.*

Me. *Yet haue I many other merchandizes very fine, that your worship hath not seene yet.*

Ma. *What are they?*

Me. *Chaines of teat amber, or such like, tablet iewels, girales faire to see to, cloth of gold the wooser sort, bead rollers, coifes of gold, supporters, gorgets of net worke, wrought shirts or smockes, necke laces of pearles and amber, all kinde of painting, and perfumes, see if you like any.*

Ma. *We will come another day, more at leasure to see all this.*

Th. *It seemes to me sir, that your trade is as that of the \* turners, which de-*

*ceines boies and gets money.*

Me. *Why is my Lady Margaret a boy?*

Th. *It sufficeth that she be deceived.*

Me. *In faith, he is not to know a little that must deceive her.*

Th. *She her selfe will deceive her selfe.*

Me. *How?*

Th. *In giuing money for these childish toies, which shine and yet are not all gold, and when she goes home, it will be founde nothing betweene two platters.*

Me. *Why is money made, but to make shew therewith?*

Th. *I knowe that this, although it glister double, it shines not.*

Ma. *I haue already told you sir, that you goe the common course of the most, & seeing you haue married as other men haue, passe that way as other men doe go not by extremities for*

*\* The nature of the beetle in the cow-turd when it is not a fingers breadth from another comes to a foole, these be the charges of marriage.*

Th. *The helpe of marriage \* like the helpe*

*of the beetle under the cow-turd, helpe to main-*

*which forsakes the burden as soone as they helpe him.*

Ma. Sir,

\* But not of feathers, for they vse no feathers fans in Spaine.

\* i. Seauen pound ten shillings.

\* Dos vezes, sefchere a ciento y tambien al quarenta.

\* The nature of the beetle in the cow-turd when it is not a fingers breadth from another comes to a foole, these be the charges of marriage.

- Ma. Aora señór éssas son pendências que se han de reñir en casa vámonos.
- Th. Vámonos señóra, toma vuestro dinero Señór mercader.
- Me. Yo quedo muy contento y beso a v.m. las manos y vea si me manda otra cosa.
- Th. Que con salud que tengamos, nunca mas nos veámos.
- Me. Por cierto Señór, yo no soy tan yngrato, que cada dia queria vér a v.m. por mi casa.
- Th. Yo créo que queríades vér mi bóffa mas no a mi.
- Me. No soy tan codicioso como a v.m. le paréce.
- Th. No digo yo que lo soys, pero apostaré que queréis mas un real de a quatro, que uno de a dos.
- Me. Por adivino le podrían a v.m. castigar.
- Th. Lo que con los ojos veo con el dedo lo adivino.
- Ma. A Dios mercader.
- Me. Beso a v.m. las manos mi Señóra.
- Ma. Vámonos a ora a la lonja a comprar sedas.
- Th. Que queréis comprar Señora?
- Ma. Que terciopelo, raso, damasco, tafetan, rizo, gorgaran, chamelote, lanillas para vestiros a vos y ami.
- Th. Para esto es menester otro dia y a es tarde vamos a comer que mañana yrémos a comprar esto.
- Ma. Vamos pues aunque yo mas quisiera que quedara oy todo hecho, que no tener que salir mañana otra buelta.
- Th. Anda, que bien os holgáis de passcar un rato, para que me queréis hazer entender de el cielo cebolla.
- Ma. No scáis malicioso que no medraráis.
- Th. Muchácho corre, llama a el platéro que venga a pesár la plata y por su dinero.

- Ma. Sir, these are quarrels to be chidden out at home. Let us goe.
- Th. Let us goe, take your money Master Merchant.
- Me. I am very well content, and kisse your hands, and see if you command anything els.
- Th. Some may haue health that we neuer see one an other more.
- Me. Truly sir I am not so ingratefull, but that euery day I would see your worship by my house.
- Th. I beleue you would see my purse rather then me.
- Me. I am not so cometous as I seeme unto you.
- Th. I say not that you are, but I will lay a wager, that you had rather haue two shillings than one.
- Me. They might well punish you for a soothsayer.
- Th. That which with the eyes I see, I conclude with my finger.
- Ma. God be with you merchant.
- Me. Ladie I kisse your hands.
- Ma. Let us goe now to the exchange to buy silkes.
- Th. What would you buy?
- Ma. What, plaine veluet, damaske, tafata, vncut veluet, gogram, chamlet, sarge, to cloath you and my selfe.
- Th. For all this another day will serue, it is late now let us goe to dinner, for to morrow we will goe to buy this.
- Ma. Let us goe then, although I would rather that al were done to day, then to come forth another turne to morrow.
- Th. Goe for you take good pleasure to walke a while, wherefore you would make me beleue the moone is made of a greene cheese?
- Ma. Be not malitious, for you shall thrive neuer the sooner.
- Th. Boy, run call the goldsmith, that he come to waigh the plate and fetch his money.

Diálogo tercero, de un combite, entre cinco cavalleros amigos llamados, Guzman, Rodrigo, don Lorenzo, Mendoza, y Osorio, un maestro sala, y un paje, en el qual, se trata de cosas pertenecientes a un combite con otras pláticas, y dichos agudos.

The thirde Dialogue of a banquet betweene five gentlemen friends, called Guzman, Rodricke, sir Lorenzo, Mendoza, Olorio, a gentleman vsher, and a Page, in which are handled things belonging to a banquet with other speeches and wittie sayings.

- G. O La, está ay algun paje?
- P. Señor.
- G. Sáues a casa de don Rodrigo?
- P. Si Señór.
- G. Pues véé allá, dile que le beso las manos, y que si le parece ora de que nos veámos.
- P. Aquí está un criado de el Señor don Lorenzo.
- G. Entre.
- Cr. Don Lorenzo mi Señór, besa a v.m. las manos y embia a saber si está en casa, por que tiene un negocio que tratar con v.m.
- G. Que beso a su merced las manos, y que yo fuera a la Suya, a besarle las sino tuviéra una ocupación forçosa que esperar, la qual tambien toca a su merced que si viniere, será el bien venido y se tratará de todo.
- Cr. Beso a v.m. las manos.
- G. Anda con Dios, ola Dezid a el maestro sala que haga poner éssas mesas, que vernán ya los convidados.
- M. Señór v.m. como se quiere servir oy, ala Italiana, o ala Francéza, o ala Ynglesá, o ala Flaménca, o ala Todéscá?
- G. De todos estos estrémos me sacad vn médio, no quiero tantas ceremonias, como el Ytaliano, ni quiero tanta curiosidad, como el Francés, ni quiero tanta abundancia, como el Yngles, ni quiero que la comida sea tan larga, como el Flaménco ni tan unida
- G. He, is there any Page there?
- P. Sir.
- G. Doit thou knowe master Rodrick his house?
- P. Yea sir.
- G. Then go thither and tell him that I commend me to him, and if he thinke good now, that we may meete together.
- P. Heere is a servant of sir Lorenzo.
- G. Let him come in.
- S. Sir Lorenzo my master commends him unto your worship, and sendes me to know whether you be at home, for hee hath a busines to entreate of with you.
- G. I thanke him, and I woulde haue come unto his house to haue saluted him, if I had not tarried beere about a busines of importance, the which also concerns him, if hee come he shall be welcome, and wee will talke at large.
- S. I take my leave of your worship.
- G. God be with you. Ho tel the gentleman, after that he make the tables to be covered, for the guests wil come by and by.
- V. Sir will your worship haue your service today, after the Italian, after the French, after the English, after the Flemish, or after the Dutch manner?
- G. Of all these extremes take me out one meane, I will not haue so many ceremonies as the Italian, neither will I so much curiositie as the French, neither such abundance as the English, neither will I that the meale be so long as the Flemmings, nor so moist as the Dutch

úmida como el tudéscu, mas de todos estos estremos, compoñeme vn medio a la Española.

M. Anfi se hará como v.m.lo manda.

G. Vuestro mayor cuidado sea que la comida sea caliente y la bebida fría.

M. Que vinos quiere v.m.

G. De todos géneros, blancos, tinto, haloque, clarete, candia, ribadavia, san Martín, tóro, y sidra, porque aya de todo.

P. Aquí viene el señor don Rodrigo.

G. O señor v.m.y las buenos años.

R. Befo a v.m. las manos.

G. Como está v.m. parece que coxéa.

R. Dime vn golpe a elapcar de el caválo en esta espinilla.

G. En ora mala sea, veamos si es algo.

R. \*No señor, si no que es como dicen dolor de cubdo, dolor de episo, duele mucho y dura poco.

G. Mas vale anfi.

R. Como tiene v.m. a mi señora doña Maria y a toda su casa?

G. A seruido de v.m. aunque ella por no aver me ynvidia dixo, que pues yo comia con mis amigos, ella se quería yr a comér con sus amigos.

R. Hizo su merced muy discretamente, en pagarle a v.m. en la misma moneda.

M. Todos estos señores conbidados están aqui, y la comida a punto quando vuestras mercedes fueren servidos, se podran asentár.

G. \*Señor don Lorenzo v.m. tiene las mañas de el Rey que adonde no está no le hallan.

L. Y v.m. quiere parecerse Alcina de quien dizé Orlando que por engañó, trayalos hombres a gozár de sus regalos.

G. Pero, no serán vuestras mercedes convertidos en animales como ella hazia.

L. \*No me aleguro, que dexe de bolverse

*Dutch, but of all these extremes, compound me a mean after the Spanish fashion.*

V. *So shall it be as your worship commandeth.*

G. *Let your chiefest care be that the meat be hot, and \* the drinke coole.*

V. *What wines will your worship haue?*

G. *Of all sortes, white sacke, deepe red brackish wine, hallocke, claret, candie, \* Ribadavia, \* S. Martin, Toro, and Cider for that there may be of euery sorte.*

P. *Heere cometh master Roderick.*

G. *Oh sir you are as welcome as the good yeere.*

R. *Sir I thanke you hartely.*

G. *How do you sir, it seemes you halt.*

R. *I bit my selfe a blowe in lighting from my horse, in this shin bone.*

G. *In ill time, let vs see if it be any thing.*

R. *No sir, it is (as they say) like the paine of a blow on the elbow, or the sorrowe of a bridegrome, \* it greeneth much and is quickly done.*

G. *It is the better.*

R. *How doth my lady Mary your wife, and all your familie.*

G. *At your seruice, although she saies (not because she ennies me) that since I banquet with my friends, she would go to dinner to hir friends.*

R. *She dealt very discretely to paie you with the same money.*

V. *All the gentlemen that are inuited are heere, and dinner is readie, when your worships please, you may sit downe.*

G. *Sir Lorenzo you haue the propertie of a king, that where he is not, there they finde him not.*

L. *And you will be like Alcina of whom Orlando maketh mention, which brought men to take pleasure in her dainties to entrap them.*

G. *But you shall not be turned into beastes as she turned them.*

L. *I am not assured of that, for some of vs may*

vérfse alguno en çorra.

R. \*De buen vino quien quiera se caça vna en el año.

G. Cada vno su alma en su palma, qual el tiempo tal sea el tiempo. Ea Señores tomen fillas v.s. mercedes y sienten se.

L. Déxenos v.m. ante todas cosas contentplár vn rato la curiosidad de la mcha.

R. \*No tiene mas pieças vn juego de mastre corál, que están hechas de las servilletas.

O. Yo aqui veo vna galéra, que no le falta mas, que la chúsma y palaménta.

M. Pues acá está vn cavalloque no sé yo, si el cavallo de Tróya era tan bien hecho.

L. A mi me ha caído en fuerte el escudo de Hércules.

R. Y este que está aqui, que es?

M. A mi me parece, que es vna pirámida de las de Egipto.

O. O es el sepulcro de máusalo, o la torre de babel.

G. Aóra déxen esto vuestras mercedes y sientense, si son servidos.

R. No se puede dexár de mirár el castillo de la enfalada.

L. Por mi vida, que no tiene mejor vista el de Milán.

G. Si cada cosa se ha de mirár de por sí, yr se nos ha el dia en flores. Cada vna tire su filla, que ésta no es mcha de cumplimientos.

O. Nolos déve aver entre amigos.

G. Yo soy yniçifiluno de çerimónias.

R. \*A mi no me parecen bien ningunas, si no son las que haze la yglefia.

G. Ola, platos, tome v.m. esse señor don Lorenzo.

L. Haga v.m. parafí, que lo mismo hará cada vno.

R. No se qual sea mejor vfo esse que víamos en España o el que se vía en ynglaterra.

G. Que

*may suffer himselfe to be \* turned i. To be drunk into a foxe.*

R. *Who soeuer loues good wine, \* hunts the foxe once a yeere. \* i. Whips the cat, or is drunk once a yeere.*

G. *Euery one holdes free will in his hands, as the time requires so frame thy desires. Go to gentlemen betake your selues to your chaires and sit downe.*

L. *Suffer vs I praie aboue all things to be holde a while the curiosities of this table.*

R. *A singlar hath no more inuentions and peeces then are made in these \* table napkins at a banquet or inuening in Spain set out with diuers fashions, as of beastes, birds, &c. thus the*

O. *I see beere a gally, there wants nothing but the gallie stauies and the oares.*

M. *And here is a horse, that I know not if the horse of Troy were so wel made. Macbeth saith alwaies doth.*

L. *And beere hath fallen to my lot Hercules shield.*

R. *And this which is beere what is it?*

M. *It seemes to me to be one of the \* Pyramids of Egypt.*

O. *Or it is Mausolus \* Tombe, or the tower of Babell.*

G. *Now leaue off this, and sit downe if it please you.*

R. *One cannot choose but looke vpon the sallet made like a castle.*

L. *In faith the castle of Milan is no better to see to.*

G. *If we must stand to behold euery thing by it selfe, the time will be gone without doing any thing. Euerie one draw his chaire, for this is not a table of complements.*

O. *They ought not to be among friends.*

G. *I am the greatest enemy in the worlde to ceremonies.*

R. *None of them seeme good vnto me, except it be those which the church makes.*

G. *Hola, dishes. Take this sir Lorenzo.*

L. *Make a dish for your selfe, for euerie one will do the like.*

R. *I knowe not which is the better custome which we vse in Spain, or that which is used in England.*

G. What

- G. Que es el vfo de ynglaterra?  
 R. Comer primero lo cozido, que lo asado, nos otros hazémos a el revés.  
 L. Segun reglas de medicina primero se déven comer los manjares que son mas duros de digestión  
 G. Y está esso en razón para que se venga a hazér la digestión en vn tiempo.  
 L. Pues que sca mas duro de digestión, lo alado que lo cozido, es cosa clara.  
 O. Yo como soy mas goloso, hallo otra razón.  
 L. Qual es?  
 O. Que toda cosa asada, es mas sabrosa que la cozida, y así, yo lo querria a el principio por que sobre buen cimiento buen edificio se haze.

\* He that is silent gathereth reasons to confute his adversary.

- Me. Pues yo aunque callo, piedras a paño.  
 R. Anda v. m. discreto, que obja que bala bocado pierde.  
 G. Ami me parece que andan ya en seco estos molinos.  
 L. De la boca me lo quitó v. m.  
 G. Pues si yo lo quite, justo es que yo lo ponga. Ola, dad nos de bever, cada vno pida lo que mas guiso le diere, que de todo ay.

- R. Páje yo soy muy devoto de a quel santo que partió la capa con el pobre.

\* Saint Martin gave a peece of his cloake to a poore man, and vone of Saint Martin the most daintie of all Spaine.

- P. A buen entendedor pocas palabras, de lo de sant Martin quiere v. m.

- R. O como eres discreto, Dios me de siempre contienda, con quien me entiénda.

- L. Pues yo vn tiempo fui torero, y me holgava siempre con \* toros bravos.

\* He alludes to wine of Toro, wines called vino de Toro, which is a Bull, as also a townes name.

- G. Señores yo brindo a quien tosiere.

- O. \* Vala me Dios y que resfriados que estamos todos, no se tosse mas en vn sermón de quarçima.

- R. Esta gracia, dízen que tenemos los Españoles que somos como monas

- G. What is the maner of England?  
 R. To eat their sodde meate first before their roast, we doe quite contrarie.  
 L. According to the rules of Physicke, men ought first to eat those meates which are most hard of digestion.  
 G. And that stands with reason, because digestion may be made togither.  
 L. Then that roastmeate is more hard of digestion then the sodde, it is a thing out of doubt.  
 O. I that am a great eater, finde another reason.  
 L. What is it?  
 O. That euery thing roasted is more sweet to the taste then the sodde, and so therefore woulde I haue it at the first, for vpon a good foundation, a good building is made.

M. \* Although I hold my peace, I gather vp stones.

- R. You saie very right, for that sheepe that bleateth loseth a bit.

- G. Me thinkes these milles go now drie.

- L. You tooke it out of my mouth.

- G. If I tooke it out, it is reason I shoulde put it in. Hold giue vs drinke, euerie one aske for that which he likes best, for there is of euery sorte.

- R. Page, I haue great deuotion to that \* Saint which departed with a peece of his cloake to a poore man.

- P. To a good understander a worde is enough, you woulde haue that of Saint Martin.

- R. O how you are in the right, God send me to dispute alway with him that understandeth what I say.

- L. I was once a courser of buls, and I alwaies tooke pleasure in fierce \* buls.

- G. Gentlemen, I drinke to him that shall cough.

- O. God blesse me, and what coldes we haue all taken, there is not more coughing in a lense sermon.

- R. This fashion (they say) that we Spaniards haue, that we are as apes, which

monas amigos de hazér lo que vemos hazér a otros.

- L. \* Aní dize vn refrán, si no hago lo que veo, todo me mco.

- G. Cada vno alga de su perdiz, y la aderçe como mejor le pareciere, ay astán limónes, limas, naranjas, pimienta, y todo lo demás.

- R. \* La perdiz, dízen los médicos, que se a de comer entre tres compañeros para que no haga mal.

- L. Tienen razón que han de ser el hombre, vn gato, y vn perro.

- O. Vuestras mercedes no han notado la variedad de asados que aqui nos han traído.

- R. Que está debaxo de aquella enramada?

- G. Vna cabeça de javali.

- R. Estónçes ramos de taverna son aquellos.

- L. Antes a el contrario que el ramo en la taberna llama a los borrachos a el vino, y aquellos llaman a el mismo vino, así como la piedra ymán el azéro.

- O. A Señor Mendóza partí de esse Xigóte con vuestros amigos.

- M. \* Señor el mio murió súbito.

- R. Parece que habeis respondido, un gran A defesio. i. disparate.

- O. Pues aunque lo parece, no lo es, que así provecho ha hablado el señor Mendóza.

- R. Pues, si no nos lo declara, no saldremos de dubda.

- M. Señor, es el caso, que dos compañeros llegaron a una venta y como no uviéssse otra cosa que cenar, que una gallina asada, el uno de ellos que tenía buena hambre, y era hombre astuto, díxo a el otro compañero, entanto que yo apáro esta gallina, contáme de que murió vuestro padre: el otro se començó a enterneçer, y con lágrimas le relaró un proçeso bien largo de la enfermedad de su padre, y como avía muerto, en lo qual tardó

which doe that which they see others to doe.

- L. So saith the proverbe, If I doe not what I see, I all to be pisse me.

- G. Euery one fasten on his partridge and order him as best shall seeme good vnto him, there are limons and oranges, pepper, and all things else.

- R. A partridge, as phisitions say, is to be eaten betweene three companions, that he may doe no harme.

- L. They say true, that is, betweene a man, a cat and a dog.

- O. You haue not marked the varietie of the roast, which here they haue brought vs.

- R. What is vnder those greene boughes?

- G. The head of a wilde boare.

- R. Then it is the bush of a tauerne.

- L. Rather the contrarie, for the tauerne bush inuities those that loue drinke to the wine, and these boughes inuities or drawes vnto it wine it selfe, euen as the loadstone draweth to it Steele.

- O. A master Mendóza, part this roast leg of mutton with your friends.

- M. Sir mine died suddenly.

- R. It seemes you haue answered with a speech quite beside the purpose.

- O. Although it seeme, it is not so, for master Mendóza hath spoken it for his aduantage.

- R. But if he do not expound it, we shall not know what it meanes.

- M. Sir, this it is, that two companions came to an Inne, vpon the high way, and as there was nothing else to suppe withall, but one hen roasted: one of them which was well hungrie & a craftie fellow, saide to the other companion, in the meane while that I breake vp and order this hen, recount vnto me whereof your father died. The other began to be tender hearted, and with teares related vnto him a long proçesse of the sickness of his father, & how he died, wherein he staid so long, that when he remembered

tardó tanto, que quando acordó ya el otro se avía comido, casi toda la gallina, el hallando se burlado, quiso esquitarse y dixo le compañero, pues yo os he contado la muerte de mi padre, contáme vos, la, de el vuestro, el compañero, por no perder La parte que le quedava y concluir presto razones, respondió, Señor, elmio murió supito: con la qual Repucita el otro quedó muy burlado y el le ayudó a despachár lo que faltava.

R. Pues aquí no corre ese riesgo.

M. No, pero yo soy como el cucullito que no canto bien hasta que tengo el estómago lleno.

L. Con licencia de el señor Guzman quiero ymbiar esta pella de manjar blanco a un amigo.  
G. Con mi licencia no yra sola sino la acompaña v. m. con aquel pavo, o este faisán o el francolin.

R. Por vida de don Lorenzo es amigo o amigo?

L. \* Quereis que confiese sin tormento.

G. \* Y quando os le den antes mártir que confessor.

O. \* O que reverenda que viene nuestra madre la olla.

R. Y bien adornada de todas sus pertenencias.

M. Yo deséo saber, donde o porque le llamaron olla podrida?

L. Metaforicamente, porque así como en vn muladar se puden muchas cosas diferentes, y de todas se haze la batiura así la olla que es compuesta de muchas cosas se viene a hazer vn guizado o potaje.

M. Tan buena metáfora fue esta como el que llamó Rey a el que guarda los puercos.

O. Por mi passatiempo yo me quiero poner a contar de quantas cosas esta compuesta su merced de nuestra olla, carnero, vaca, tocino.  
d.L. \* Estas

*membred himselfe, the other had atreadie eaten almost all the hen, he finding himselfe mocked, would quite himselfe, and saide unto him, companion, seeing I have tolde you the death of my father, doe you tell me now the death of your father: his companion for that hee would not loose that part which remained, and because he would be short answered, Sir, my father died suddenly, with which answer he gaue his fellow a scoffe, and himselfe time to dispatch the rest.*

R. But here is not the like danger.

M. Although not, I am like the cuckow, which sing not untill I have my stomacke full.

L. With leave of Master Guzman, I will send this round ball of \* Manjar blanco to a friend.

G. With my leave it shall not goe alone, but that you accompanie with it, this peacock, this feasant, or this francolin bird.

R. I pray you hartely Sir Lorenzo, is it a be friend or the friend?

L. Will you that I confesse without the racke?

G. And when they doe racke you, rather proove a martyr then a confessor.

O. Or what a reverend person comes here, our mother the meate.

R. And well adorned with all her appurtenances.

M. I desire to knowe, from whence or why they called it \* Olla podrida.

L. Metaphorically, because even as in a dung hill many different things rot together, and of all these they make dung for the field: even so the pot which is compounded of many things is made one iellie or potage.

M. This was as good a metaphor as that of him, which called the king the keeper of hogs.

O. For my recreation I will set my selfe to reckon, of how many things this worshipfull the pot, is compounded, first mutton, beefe, and bacon.  
L. These

d.L. \* Estas son las tres potencias de la olla como las de la alma, memoria, entendimiento, voluntad.

O. Luego se sigue repollo, navos, cebollas, ajos.

d.L. \* Estas son las quatro virtudes cardinales.

O. Cerveças y pies de aves, culantro verde, alcarabá, cominos, todas especias, las de mas yerbas, y no las conosco, otro las quente.

d.R. Lo que yo contaré despues, será lo bien que me ha sabido.

d.L. De el marques chapin vitelo Ytaliano, que fue uno de los mas valientes soldados que ha tenido aquella nación, se cuenta que quando fue a España le dieron tanto gusto estas ollas, que nunca querría comer en su casa, si no que yendo por la calle olía en casa de algun labrador rico, adonde se comía alguna olla de estas, y se entrava allá y se a sentaba a comer con el.

d.R. Devialo de hazer por comer a costa agena.

L. No, que antes que saliese mandava a su mayordomo pagasse toda la costa de la olla.

M. Pare, mira como pones esse plato no deribes el salero.

L. Si, si, guarda, que es el agüero de los mendozas.

R. Ya todos somos Mendozas en esso.

L. Esta rastra nos quedó de la gentilidad.

M. Hemos visto experiencias muy verdaderas.

O. \* Créo en Dios y no en putas viejas.

M. Estas son de las que yo me procuro siempre guardar.

R. O señor Guzman para que es esto que se trae agora?

G. Dizen que para comer.

R. Si, pero era menester hazer nuevos estómagos, en que echállo.

O. Mandar los hazer de barro a trueco de

L. These are the three powers of the pot, as the three powers of the soule, memory, understanding, will.

O. Now followe cabbage, turneps, onyons, garlicke.

L. These be the fouer cardinall vertues.

O. The beades and fete of birdes, the herbe carobes or S. Johns herbe, comines, all sortes of spices, the most part of herbes, I knowe them not, let another speake of them.

R. That which I will saie of it shall be the good I have tasted in it.

L. Of marques Chapin Vitelo, an Italian, which was one of the most valiant souldiers, which that nation hath had, it is saide, that when he went to Spaine, these hogdgets liked his taste so well, that he neuer would dine in his owne house, but that going in the streete, where hee smelt in the house of any rich farmer, where any of these hogdgets were eaten, there he entred, and sate downe to diner with him.

R. Belike hee did that to dine at another mans charges.

L. No, for before he went out of dores hee commanded his steward, to paye all the cost of the hogdget.

M. Staie, looke howe thou pusseth this platter, do not throwe downe the salt-seller.

L. Tea, yea, take heed, for it is the Mendozas malum omen.

R. We are all Mendozas in this.

L. This trace doth remaine to vs from the Gentiles.

M. Wee have seene many true examples heereof.

O. I beleene in God, and not in olde wiues tales.

M. Those are they from which I abraies seeke to keepe my selfe.

R. O master Guzman, wherefore is this that they bring now?

G. They saie for to eate.

R. Tea, but it were need to make stomacke to receive it.

O. Cause them to bee made of claye, for a small

de poco dinero.

M. Estas tortas reales, son como cuerpo que no ocupa lugar.

\* Made of the heads, livers, hearts, breasts, feet, of ducks, geese, or other birds, &c.

\* Of paste of almonds and sugar, eggs, breasts of hens, milk, cinnamon, and divers sorts of spices verie like Manjar blanco.

L. Yo tengo de provar esta pepitoria.

R. Yo conel \* manjar real me acomodó.

G. No ay quien prueve estos guisados, estos torreños lampreados, aquel adobado, el carnero verde, las albóndigas, ni lo de mas.

T. \* Todo esto es como Pedro por de mas.

O. O como alla voy no hago mengua.

G. Alçalo pues muchacho defembaráça y trae aquella fruta de sartén.

\* Wine sodden to the third part for a sauce for the fritters.

P. Aqui está señor, y la meloja y todo.

R. Esto allá a los aguados, que la borraça no quiere pásia.

\* But salt meats to make them drinke.

G. Trae pues la fruta de póstre, camuésas, peras, azeitunas, nueces, javellanas, y la caja de mermelada.

L. Hasta quando hemos de comer?

R. \* Hasta enfermár, como dize el refrán.

L. Y despues ayunar hasta sanar.

O. Levánta esta mesa paje, que es ya gula tanto comer.

M. \* Yo he perdido la gana, como si me la quitáran con la mano.

L. El mejor remedio, que halláron los filósofos, contra la hambre, fue este.

R. \* Esta filosofía algo es gruessa de hilaça.

O. Mejor se podrá dezir verdad apurada que ya faveis lo que es.

L. \* Ya se que verdades apuradas son neçedades.

O. Mas pulido lo queria yo dezir.

R. Como?

O. Yndiscreçiones.

d.L. Tanto monta cortar, como defatar,

small price of money.

M. These riall tartes are as the bodie which filleth no place.

L. I will proove this \* Pepitório or gallimaufrie.

R. I do apply my selfe to this riall dish of meate.

G. Is there no bodie to proove these other meates, these hogs liners with the hogs caule fried with the fat, that hodgepot of mutton, mutton stuffed with parly, the chopped meat made into round balls, neither the rest.

L. All this is as Peter too much.

O. Oh as I goe there I neuer faile.

G. Take off boy, rid the table, and bring these fritters.

P. Here it is Sir, and the \* Meloja and all.

R. That there is for those that drinke water, for one that lones wine lones not to eat \* raisins.

G. Bring fruit for the last service, pippins, peares, olives, wallnuts, small nuts, and the boxe of marmalade.

L. Till when shall we eat?

R. Vntill we be sicke, as saith the proverbe.

L. And afterward to fast till wee bee in healib.

O. Take away this table, Page, for it is gluttonie to eat so much.

M. I haue lost my stomack, as though they had taken it from me with ones hand.

L. The best remedie that euery philosopher found against hunger, was this.

R. This philosophie is somewhat of a grosse threed.

O. Better may you say a refined truth, you know what I meane.

L. I knowe that refined truthe is fooleries.

O. I would giue it a better terme.

R. How?

O. Indiscretions.

L. It comes all to one, to cut it off or untie it,

tár, como dixo Alexandre.

d.R. Ola paje, trae unos naipes entretengámos el tiempo.

M. Esto me contenta, vengan que desseo esquitár me de un escudo que perdí estótro día.

d.L. \* No me pása ami de que mi hijo juegue, sino de que se quiere esquitár.

M. El tahúr, chica ocasión ha menester para bolvér a el juego.

d.L. A mi me parece que sola una.

M. Qual es?

d.L. Tener dineros.

M. Nial tahúr faltó que jugar, nial goloso que comer, nial endurador que endurar, nial boracho que bever.

d.R. Aqui están los naipes, que jugarémos.

d.L. Juguémos gana piérde.

M. Es juego de mucha fléma.

d.L. Pues sea a el triunfo.

M. Quéde para los viejos.

d.L. A los çientos.

M. Desvanéçe se me la cabeça, de estár siempre contando.

d.L. Menos os agradará el chilindrón.

M. Effe para las mugéres de tras de los tiçones.

d.L. No es, si no que vos no queréis juego de virtud, si no de arrebatáça.

M. Para que hemos de estár gastando tiempo, si no lo que se a de empenár, venda se, como dizen.

d.R. Si por que haziénda hécha, no da priçia.

d.L. \* Y mas quando le gánan a el hombre su dinero, le quitan presto decuidado.

M. He aquí están los naipes juguémos treinta por fuerça, o los albüres que todos estos son buenos juegos.

d.R. Yo no soy amigo de ellos, si no de juegos de primór, como el Reynado, el tres dos y as, triunfo callado y otros semejantes.

O. Ora

it, as Alexander said.

R. Hola page, bring cardes; let vs passe away the time.

M. That please me well, let them come, for I desire to quit my selfe of a crowne, that I lost this other day.

L. It grieues me not that my sonne is a gamester, but that he will goe to quit himselfe.

M. The gamester requirereth but small occasion to returne to plaie.

L. It seemes to me but one onely.

M. What is it?

L. That he haue money to doe it.

M. Neither hath the gamester euery manred money to play, nor the gluttonous to eat, nor the patient to suffer; nor the lousie of drinke so drinke.

R. Here are the cards, what shall we play at?

L. Let vs play at loadam.

M. It is a plaie of much patience.

L. Then let it be at trumpe.

M. Let that be for old men.

L. At mount fant.

M. It makes my head to be in a swoune, to be alwaies counting.

L. Lesse will the play of Chilindron like you.

M. That is for women by the fire side.

L. It is not, but that you will not haue any game of vertue but sweepe stake play.

M. Wherefore should we waste time, but that which we must pwayne, let vs sell our right as they say.

R. Tea, but ones substance made up, let there be no haste to lose ones money.

L. And moreover, when they win a mans money from him, they straightway take him out of care.

M. Behold here are the cardes, let vs play at thirtie perforce or Albures, for these are good plaies.

R. I loue not these but games of chiefest price, as the Reynado, the three, two and ace, still trumpe, and other the like.

m i O. Now

- O. Ora por quitar todos de contiéndia yo quiero dar vn médio y sea este la primera.
- M. Muy bien avéis dicho que es médio entre los estrénos.
- d.L. Yo entiendo que se llamó primera, porque tiene el primero lugar entre los juegos de náypes.
- d.R. Alto, que ha de ser el tanto?
- M. Quatro reales y dies y seis de faca.
- d.L. Pues baraja esos naipes bien.
- O. Yo algo por mano, figura úvo de tēr, no querría yo yr hecho figura sin blanca.
- d.R. Yo un ás alcé.
- d.L. Yo un quátro.
- M. Yo vn seis, con que soy mano.
- O. Vengan las cartas que yo las doy una, dos, tres, quatro. Vna, dos, tres, quatro.
- M. Paso.
- d.R. Paso.
- d.L. Paso.
- O. Enbido un tanto.
- M. Nole quiero.
- d.R. Nole quiero.
- d.L. Yo por fuérça avré de querér, echád cartas.
- M. Echad me quatro cartas he aqui mi tanto.
- d.R. He aqui el mio, cada uno meta el suyo.
- M. Buelvo a pasar.
- d.R. Yo tambien.
- d.L. Yo hago lo propio.
- O. Yo enbido mi resto.
- M. Quiero le.
- d.R. Yo tambien.
- b.L. Pues yo no me puedo echár.
- M. Yo hize una primerilla.
- d.L. Yo voy a flux.
- M. No querría yo que le hiziesedes.
- d.L. Es esta buena prouixidad?
- M. \*La caridad bien ordenada comienza de si mismo.
- O. Yo he hecho cinquenta y cinco con que máto su primera.
- d.L. Yo flux con que tiro.
- d.R. No juego masa este juego.
- M. Ni yo a otro ninguno que voy a vn negocio
- O. Now to take away all occasion of strife, I will give a meane, and let it be Primera.
- M. You haue saide very well, for it is a meane betweene extremes.
- L. I take it that it is called Primera, because it hath the first place at the play at cardes.
- R. Let vs goe, what is the summe that we play for?
- M. Two shillings stake, and eight shillings rest.
- L. Then shuffle the cardes well.
- O. I list to see who shall deale, it must be a coate card, I would not be a coate with neuer a blanke in my purse.
- R. I did list an ace.
- L. I a fower.
- M. I a sixe, whereby I am the eldest hand.
- O. Let the cardes come to me, for I deale them, one, two, three, fower, one, two, three, fower.
- M. Passe.
- R. Passe.
- L. Passe.
- O. I set so much.
- M. I will none.
- R. I none.
- L. I must of force see it, deale the cards.
- M. Give me fower cards, Ile see as much as he sets.
- R. See heere my rest, let euery one be in.
- M. I am come to passe againe.
- R. And I too.
- L. I do the selfe same.
- O. I set my rest.
- M. Ile see it.
- R. I also.
- L. I cannot gine it ouer.
- M. I was a small prime.
- L. I am flush.
- M. I would you were not.
- L. Is this good neighbourhood?
- M. Charitie well placed, doth first beginne with ones selfe.
- O. I made sine and sistie, with which I win his prime.
- L. I flush whereby I draw.
- R. I play no more at this play.
- M. Neithor I at any other, for I must goe about

- negocio que me ympórta.
- d.L. Pajes toma cada quatro reales de barato.
- Pa. Centuplum acipias.
- Pa. En el çielo lo hallev. m. colgado de vn garavato.

Diálogo quarto, entre dos amigos llamados el uno Mora, el otro Aguilar y un moço de mnlas y una Ventera, tratan se en el de las cosas tocantes a el camino con muy graciosos dichos y chistes.

The fourth Dialogue betweene two friends, the one called Mora, the other Aguilar and a muletter and a woman Inkeper: Heerein are handled things pertaining to the way with very pleasant sayings, and gracious speeches.

- M. O La Pedro havéis traído mi mula?
- P. Señor si, aquí está la mohína.
- M. Mohina es nunca buena.
- P. Por que, Señor?
- M. \*Por que ni mula mohína, ni moça marina, ni moço Pedro en casa, ni Abád por Vezino, ni poyo a la puerta, no es bueno.
- P. Yo le prométo a v. m. que es mejor esta, que la que arastró a el cura quando dezía Dominus providebit.
- M. Esvieja?
- P. Nunca la vi naçér, mas yo créo que mas vieja éra su madre.
- M. Tira cozes?
- P. Nunca una sola.
- M. Siempre son a pares, camina bien?
- P. Todo lo que anda se dexa atrás.
- M. Tan buenas gracias tiene a fee que me va enamorando.
- P. Vna tiene sobre todas que es grande Ostróloga.
- M. Como así?
- P. Conoce mejor que vn relóx quando es médio dia, y luego pide çebáda, y si no se la dan dize lunes
- M. H O Peter haue you brought my mule?
- P. Yea sir, heere is the \* Mohina.
- M. Mohina is neuer good.
- P. Why sir?
- M. \*Because neither a mule with a blacke muffle, nor a maide that hath passed the sea, nor a seruant \* Peter blacke face or in ones house, nor a neighbour about, nor a Well at the dore, is euer having iadish good.
- P. I promise your worship that she is better then that which dragged along \* the curate when he said, Dominus providebit.
- M. Is she old?
- P. I sawe hir not foaled, but I beleene that hir dame was elder.
- M. Doth she kicke?
- P. Shee neuer giues one alone.
- M. They are alwaies by couples, doth shee trauell well?
- P. She neuer trauels but shee leanes the way behinde her.
- M. She hath so good tricks in faith, that I am in loue with her.
- P. One she hath above all, for she is a great Astronomer.
- M. How so?
- P. She knowes better then a clocke when it is noone, and forthwith she lookes for promender, and if they

\* Mohina, signifies anger, passion, discontent, churlishnes. Also a shee mule with a blacke face or muffle, alwaies having iadish tricks.

\* A curate salting off his mule hanging in the stirrup was dragged so a long, till a laborer in the fildes tooke him out.



lunes y no ay passár de allí.

\* Lunes, meaning here the grunting voice of a mule or horse, but Lunas properly signifies Monday.

M. Buen remedio para esso rogár se lo con la espuela.

P. Es haquíluna de memoria.

M. Como?

P. Aunque le hinguen vn palmo de espuela a dos passos que da, se le ha ya olvidado.

M. \* Tráidla, no se me da náda, que topado ha Sancho con su Roqino y si ella es traydora yo soy alebófo, y nos entenderémos a coplas.

\* A scabbed horse fit for a scaldie squier.

P. \* En yendo v.m. con cuydado hará de ella cera y Pavilo que ella con quien se descuyda uía sus tretas.

\* The waxe of the candle, and the weede of the candle, at a nail

M. Echalde la silla, apretáldle bien la sincha ponéldle gurupera atárrre y pretál, acorta estos estribos que yo me averné con ella.

P. Quiero ponér, vnas acciones nuevas por mas seguridad.

M. Echalde el freno, ponéd le bien el bocádo y acortád la cabeçada mirád si está bien herráda de todos quatro pies.

\* Manos, i. the forefeete.

P. \* En las manos, buenas herraduras y clavos tiene, de los pies de suyo gasta.

\* With kicking.

M. Echáldo el coxín y porta mantéo.

A. Ea compañero hémos ya de acabár de salir oy de aquí?

M. Ya vos venís cavalgando?

A. \* Vos tardáis mas en componér os que vna nóbia.

M. Vuestra mula es maná?

A. Como vna borrega no lo veis que fure maléa.

M. \* De el agua manza me libre dios, que de la braba yo me guardaré.

A. A la vuestra, basta le ser mohína.

M. Mal conocéys vos a quien nunca vistes, pues a fee que está granduáda por zalamánca.

A. En

give her none, then she saies \* lunas, and stirres not a foote from the place.

M. A good remedie for this to intreat her with the spur.

P. She is most weak of memorie.

M. How?

P. Although you strike into her a hands breadth of the spur, within two steps, after she hath forgotten it.

M. Bring her, I care not, for Sancho hath met with his palfrey, and if she be a knauish iade I am asknauish a rider, and we shall understand one another by couples.

P. You traucelling with her with good heed, you may agree like the waxe and the weede, but see with one that is not aware of hir will plaie hir part like a fencer.

M. Set on the saddle, girde hir harde with the girts, put on the crooper and pottrell, make shorter these stirrups, for I will make agreement with hir.

P. I will put on newe stirrup leathers for more securitie.

M. Put on the bridle, make the bit fast, make shorter the headstall, looke if she be well shod of all fower feete.

P. On the forefeete she hath good shooes and nailes, on the hinder feete she weares out hir owne hoofs.

M. Put the cushion on the saddle and the portemanteau.

A. How now companion, shall we make an end that we may get hence to day?

M. What are you come already, and a horse backe?

A. You tarrie longer in setting your selfe in order then a bride.

M. Is your mule gentle?

A. As gentle as a lambe, do you not see he beares a maile.

M. From the stil water, God keepe me, from the raging, I will keepe my selfe.

A. For your mule, it is sufficient, that she is a mule with a blacke muzzle.

M. You hardly know him whom you neuer saw, but in faith this mule hath taken degree in Zalamanca.

A. In

A. En que facultad?

M. En la de la vellaquería, bachillera en artes de tirar cózes, licenciada en léyes de ventás y de mesónes, y doctora es en astrología y matemáticas.

A. Por esso está siempre mirando a el cielo.

M. Es por contemplar los ástros y planetas y signos y sus cúrsus.

A. Vámos de aquí que tenemos larga la jornada.

M. Quantas leguas pensáys caminar oy?

A. Yo querría que doze.

M. Pues ala mano de dios Pedro ten esse estribo.

A. Pedro os Llamáys compañero?

P. A servicio de v.m.

A. Pues no le hága Dios mas mala a Pedro de el que se le alcánça.

P. No ay porque Dios de salud a su merced.

A. Sé que las pullas no se han de echár a los amigos.

M. \* De amigo a amigo chínche en el ojo.

A. Yo no quiero pleito con vos Pedro, que sabéis mucho.

P. Mas \* Sábe vn torézno.

A. Moço de mulas vn punto save mas que el diáblo.

M. Pues que pensáys vos que le falta a Pedro para diablo?

P. No mas que vn año de aprendiz y vn garaváto.

A. Para que el garaváto?

P. Para facár a vuestras mercedes de la caldera quando allá váyan.

M. Nosotros no hémos de yr a el ynfierno

P. No se yrán mas llevaros hán.

M. Are dro váyas malo, ergo maledicte diábole.

A. Pedro amigo de que se haze la puta vieja?

P. De la puta moça.

M. No se haze sino de seldo y eneldo y de el cagaxón mordédo y de el polvo de las \* éras.

A. De

A. In what arte?

M. In the arte of villanie, Bachelor of the kicking art, Licentiat of lawes in Innes, and doctor in Astrologie, and the Mathematickes.

A. For this cause, shee looks alwaies towards heauen.

M. It is to contemplate the stars, planets, and signes, and their courses.

A. Let vs go, for we haue a long iourney.

M. How many leagues do you thinke to trauell to day?

A. I would willingly go twelue.

M. Then in the name of God, Peter holde this stirrup.

A. Friend are you called Peter?

M. At your seruice sir.

A. Then God do no more mischief to Peter, then that he knowes himselfe how to practise.

P. There is no cause why God giue you health sir.

A. I know that men ought not to flout their friends.

M. One friend to another friend, a \* Cinche \* Chinche, a little rounde in the eie.

A. I will not go to law with you Peter, for that you know so much.

P. A rasher of bacon sauers more.

A. A mulster knowes one point more, then bed, bites worse when a losse, and sinketh filthily.

M. Why what thinke you, what wants Peter to become a diuell?

P. No more but a yeeres apprenticeship, and a flesh-hooke.

A. Why a flesh-hooke?

P. To pull out your worships out of the cauldern when you go thither.

M. We are not to go to hell.

P. You are not to go, but they are to carrie you thither.

M. Come bebinde me therefore euill spirit, Maledicte diábole.

A. Friend Peter, of what is an old whore made of?

P. Of a young whore.

M. It is not made but of thy selfe and the floore where berb dill, & of sitting eate thy fill, & they thresh of the dust of barn floore, or of the dust their corne, and of which thou art thy selfe.

m 3

A. I

A. De cara me le vco y tiéne alpargátes, y va a pie.

\* Shoes of packthred made for footemen or lackies to travel a foote.

M. Pedro mira que te dize no respóndes?

P. \* No óygo que soy fordo de vna mucla.

M. \* Pues a el maestro Cuchillada?

P. No me lastima mucho esta Herida que es dáda vñas arriba, però guarde se de el rebés que yotiraré vñas abájo.

A. Pedro yo entiendo que soys vos aquel que llamávan de vnde malas.

P. Pues todo el mundo ojo alerta que alguna téngo de vdrir en este camíno.

A. Pedro allí viene vn caminante échale vna pulla.

P. Ola hermano por donde van?

C. A do?

P. En casa de la puta que os parió.

A. Buena a fee otra a el compañero que queda atrás.

P. A señór es fuyo el mulo?

C. Qual mulo?

P. Aquel que befish en el culo.

A. Este cavalléro que viene muy brábo no baya sin la fuya.

P. A señór v.m. a cafo va a londres?

C. Si voy porque lo dezís.

P. Pues cagaxon para quien vaa Londres.

M. Que bonito es Pedro si se lavasse.

P. Antes despues de lavado no valgo nada.

A. Quanto avrémos andádo Pedro?

P. \* Nunca buelvo a mirár atrás, por no fer como la mugér de Lot.

A. Quanto nos falta de aqui a el primer Pueblo?

P. Legua y miérda.

M. La legua andarémos nosotros, esotra vos la paréis.

A. Pues por que se pafie sin sentir quenta vn quento Pedro.

P. De dinéros para mi le contará yo de buena gana.

A. No

A. I see him iust over against me, and he hath \* shoes of packthred, and hee goes a foote.

M. Peter, heake what he saith unto thee, dost thou not answer?

P. I heare not, for I am deafe of one of my chocke teeth.

M. What hath the master of Fence a blowe or venie?

P. This wound hurts me not much, for it is giuen with the hand upward, but beware of the swash blow, for I will draw it with the hand downwards.

A. Peter I vnderstande that you are hee which they called a plotter of knaeries?

P. Euery one looke to himselfe, for I must plot somthing this iourney.

A. Peter there commeth a trauller, bestowe a quip on him.

P. Hola brother, which way go they?

T. Whither?

P. To the house of the queane thy mother.

A. Good in faith, another to his companion, which remaines behind.

P. Ho sir, is the mule yours?

T. What mule?

P. That whose arse kisse you.

A. This gentleman which goeth so bodily, let him not passe without his flout.

P. Ho sir goes your worship to London?

T. Yea, I go for that you saie it.

P. Then a turd for him that goeth to London.

M. Oh how proper a man were Peter, if he were washed and painted.

P. Nay after I am washed I am worth nothing.

A. How far haue we tourneyed Peter?

P. I neuer turne to looke backe, because I would not be as Lots wife.

A. How far haue we from hence to the next towne?

P. Aleague and a turd.

M. The league we will goe, the other thou shalt passe.

A. That we may passe over this iourney without wearisomnes, tell vs a tale Peter.

P. For my part, I would tell money with a better will.

A. Not

A. No, si no algun acaççido que te avíno por ellos camínos.

P. Estonces contar les hé vno que me subçedío el viáje passádo haziendo este camíno con vn hidágo.

M. No sea muy largo que me dormiré.

P. Si se durmiere la molina tendrá cuydado de despertár le.

M. Vos le havéis levantádo mil falsos testímónios, mira quan bien camína y quan maná va?

P. \* A el freír lo verá.

A. Ea dexémos esto vaya el quento.

P. Pocos dias ha, yo vine este camíno con vno de los mayores habladores que he conoçido en mi vida y como el hablar mucho, y el mentir son tan parientes, dezía las mas terribles mentiras que se pueden ymaginar, pues como el me preguntasse vn dia que me parecia de su buena conversacion, yo le respondi que muy bien, però que quando contasse algun quento, se Alargasse y passasse tanto, que dava que mormurar a quantos le oyan, el me dixo pues sea esta la manera quando lleguemos a las posadas, sienta se tu apar de mi, y si me viéres contar algo que te parezca que voy fuera de camíno, tira me de la halda, estonces yo entenderé, y me deterné, con este con çierto llegamos aquella noche a vna venta, donde a cafo avian llegado tambien muchos cavalléros, y como se asentassen a çenar y mi amo entre ellos, yo me puse a fu lado conforme a el conçierto, y como es costumbre cada vno començó a contar las maravillas que avia visto por el mundo, llegó la bez a el bueno de mi amo el qual dixo que avia estádo en tierra de japon, y que entre otras cosas maravillosas que alli avia visto fue vna yglézia que tenia mil pies de largo, a este tiémpo yo que le

vide

A. Not so, but some chaunce that hath fallen out to bee on these waies.

P. Then I will tell you one which happened vnto me the last voyage I came this way with a gentleman.

M. Let it not be too long for I will sleepe.

P. If you sleepe, the she mule will be carefull to wake you.

M. You have raised a thousand false testimonies against her, behold how well she travelleth, and how well she goeth.

P. \* By the frying you shall see.

A. Well let vs leave this, forward with the tale.

P. A little while since, I came this way with one of the greatest babblers that I knew in my life, and the woman as much prating and lying as neere king if they of kinne, hee tolde the most horrible lies that could be imagined, afterward as he asked me one daie, what I thought of his good behaviour, I made him answer, that should see. I thought well, but that when hee did tell any tale, hee passed the bounds so much, that hee gave occasion to as many as did heare him, to speake ill of him behinde his backe: he tolde me, seeing it was, when we come to our Innes, sit thou next unto me, and if thou shalt see me tell any thing that seemes unto thee that I goe out of the way, pluck me by the skirt, then will I vnderstand and stay my selfe, with this agreement we came that night to a lodging on the high waie, whither by chaunce also many gentlemen were arrived, and as they sate them downe to supper, and my master among them, I set my selfe close by his side, according to our agreement, and as the manner is, euery one began to tell of the marvels which hee had seene in the world, the turne came to the good man my master, who saide that hee had beene in the lande of Iaptha, and among other mayrellous things that there hee had seene was a church, which was a thousand foote long.

\* A collier sold coales to a woman and putting downe his coales put up

the frying pan, and the woman answered, A frey the frying she should see.

vide yr tan desinándado y como estava a lerta tiro le rézio de la halda, el luego me entendió, y dixo: y vno en ancho: los cavalleros se començaron a mirar vnos a otros y a son-rey se hásta que vno dellos dixo, vala me Dios señór, y para que servía esta yglezia tan larga y angosta, de mill pies de largo: y vno en ancho, el replicó agradezcan vuestras merçedes que me tiraron de la falda atiendo, que si no, yo les boto a Dios que yo la quadrara, fue estonçes tanta la ría de todos que a mi amo le convino aquella noche salirse de la venta, por que entre todos quedó por refrán quando alguno contava algo que pareçia mentira. \* Le dezia el terçero quadre la v. m. que harto larga está.

- M. De vna cosa me espanto yo Pedro.  
P. Qual es?  
M. Como pudiste durar tan largo tiempo con tu competidor en la facultad.  
A. \* Si, por que esse es tu enemigo el que es de tu oficio.  
P. Es verdad que muchas vezes le quise dexar por esso, y te lo dezia que no queria mas caminar con el, por que era tocado de mi propia enfermedad y no me dexava hazer bafa.  
\* As at cards.  
A. Y que respondió a esso?  
P. Luego me prometia juramento, que callaria toda vna jornada para que yo hablasse.  
A. Y cumplia lo?  
P. Tan ynposible le era a el poder lo \* cumplir como a v. m. dijérir esse pelo de asno, que ha comido.  
\* i. Calling him asse by craft or the gudgeons, or fooleries to day you have swallowed.  
M. Compañero pagado os han vuestro trabajo.  
A. No tenéis razon Pedro ansí yo os vca zarco a poder de nubes.  
P. Antes ciegue, que mal vca.  
A. \* Ansí yo os vca arçobispo con mi-  
tra

long: then I seeing him so far out of order, as I was readie prepared, pluckt him by the skirt, he presently understood me, and said, and one foot in breadth: the gentlemen began to looke one upon another, and to smile, untill one of them saide, In the name of God sir, and for what use served this church so long & narrow, of a thousand foot in length, and but one in breadth? he replied, thanke him, that pulled me by the skirt of the garment so soone, which if he had not done, I vow to God, I had made it fower square: then was there such a laughter among all, that my master was faine that night to get him out of the Inne, for that among them all, it remained as a proverb, when any one did tell anything which did seeme a lie, the third man said unto him, make it square, for it is long enough.

- M. Of one thing I wonder Peter.  
P. What is it?  
M. How thou couldst endure so long time, with thy competitor in thine owne facultie?  
A. Yea, for he is thy enimie which is of thy owne profession.  
P. It is true for many times I would leave him for this cause, and did tel him, that I would not travell no more with him, because he was infected with my disease, and did not suffer me to take up a tricke.  
A. And what answer made he to this?  
P. Forthwith he promised me with an oath, that he would hold his peace all one journey, that I might speake.  
A. And did he performe it?  
P. It was as impossible for him to have power to accomplish it, as for your worship to digest this \* asses haire which you have eaten.  
M. Companion, you are paid home for your labour.  
A. You mistake Peter, I see you dimme sighted, by reason of cloudes.  
P. Rather with I you blinde, then that I see ill.  
A. Nay rather that I may have my sight to

- P. Ansí yo le vca a el, Pápa higos de su mula.  
A. \* Echo te vna pulla \* con su pullonçillo que tu mugér te haga ciervo y te llámen todos cuquillo.  
P. \* Echo te vna pulla venida sobre mar, que los dientes se te cáyan y no puedas meár.  
M. Piquemos compañero que se va haziendo tarde.  
A. Que hora será Pedro?  
P. La de ayer a estas horas puntualmente.  
A. Eslo tambien lo dixera mi mula si supiera hablar.  
P. Soy yo Relóx, que me pregunta que ora es?  
A. \* A lo menos \* badájo, que monta tanto.  
P. Y si doy adonde daré?  
A. En la cabeça de el putto de tu padre.  
P. Mas çerca está la fuya y sonará bien, pues esta hueca.  
M. Bien camina de andadura vuestra mula.  
A. Y la vuestra ha bien deportante.  
M. Si no la convirtiesse algunas vezes en tróte que pareçe a el de la madre.  
A. Entrémos en esta venta a dár çevada y comer vn vocado.  
P. Vn bocado no mas, mas piénso yo comer de vn ciento.  
M. No os fabréis passár un día sin comer Pedro?  
P. \* Par dios nuéstro amo, como dize el vizcaíno, tripas llévan a pies que no pies a tripas.  
A. \* Yo tambien digo que pan y vino anden camino que no moço garrido.  
P. Paz sea en esta casa quien está acá hucipeda?  
V. Quien está alla quien lláma?  
P. Ay posada señora?  
V. Si señór, entren y sean muy bien venidos que todo recado ay.

P. Que

- to see you an Archbishop with \* a miser of seven hand bredth high. which is a high hat of paper set on the head of a baynde, riding on an asse thorrow the streetes for a punishment.  
P. Nay not so, but that I might also see you eat the shittings of your mule.  
A. I cast thee a bone, with his yong one to gnawe upon, thy wife makes thee a bart, and they call thee cuckold for a punishment.  
P. I cast the bone to gnawe upon at sea, thy teeth fall out, and thy water hold in.  
M. Let vs spurre on companion, for it waxeth late.  
A. What is it a clocke Peter?  
P. Just the same, as it was yesterday at this time.  
A. This could my mule tell me, if she could speake?  
P. Am I a clocke, that you aske me what it is a clocke?  
A. At least thou art a clapper, which is all one.  
P. And if I do strike where shall I hit?  
A. Vpon the head of the buggerer thy father.  
P. Your head is neere unto me, and it will sound well seeing it is hollow.  
M. Your mule doth go a swift easie pace.  
A. And yours ambles well.  
M. If she did not change it, sometimes into a trot, which seemes like the trot of hir dam.  
A. Let vs go in into this Inne, to baite and eate a bitte.  
P. What one bit and no more, I thinke to \* A Biskaine travelling a foote faine for want of fooode, filled his belly, afterward went lustely, & said, the belly carrieth the feete, & not the feete the bellie.  
M. Can you not passe one daie Peter without eating?  
P. By God our master as the \* Biskaine saith, the bellie carrieth the feete and not the feete the bellie.  
A. I also say, \* that bread and wine are travellers, and not the lustie frolike youth.  
P. Peace be in this house, who is heere hostesse?  
H. Who is there, who calls?  
P. Have you lodging mistris?  
H. Yes Sir, come in, and be very well welcome, for all good entertainment is here to be had.

P. What

- P. Que aurá que comer?  
 V. Ay conjos ay perdices, ay pollos, ay gallinas, ay ganços, ay ánaes, ay carnero, ay vaca, ay cabrito, ay menudo de puerco.  
 P. Bien dixe yo que en su calá de v.m. no podía faltár puerco.  
 V. Ni en la luya faltará vellaco, mientras el estuviere dentro.  
 P. No en verdad señora, sino que me dixéron que los dias passados avía v.m. reñido bravamente con la limpieça.  
 V. Tambien me dixeron a mi que avía el desterrado la Verguença de su calá.  
 M. Huelgo me Pedro que as topado con lo que avías menester.  
 P. Y aun ella me ha menester a mi.  
 V. \*Yo por cierto, si no es para ponerle en peralvillo con doze y la maeltra, no se para que?  
 P. Aora Señora no nos digámos mas calláte, y callémos que sendas nos tenemos.  
 V. Ea acábe hablador de Ventája, pídale lo que ha menester.  
 P. Deme hénno, y paja, y çebada, para las mulas.  
 V. Quanto quiere?  
 P. Dos harneros de hénno y un zelemín de çebada.  
 V. Muy poco es para tres vestias.  
 P. Aquí no ay mas que dos qual es la otra?  
 V. La otra foyvos y mastragóna que esórtas dos.  
 P. Si foymas, no de paxa ni çebada porque es muy dura de digestion.  
 V. Mas duro es vn garróte y suele ablandár las costillas a vn vellaco.  
 M. Bien está no passe mas adelante señora Huéspedada quanto pónen de aquí a la çiuðad?  
 V. Señor çinco leguas.  
 M. Podrémos los camínar de a quia la noche?  
 V. Como picáren?

M. Ay

- P. What shall we haue to dinner?  
 H. There are conies, there are partridges, there are chickens, hennes, geese, ducks, there is mutton, there is beefe, kid, and hogs inwards.  
 P. Well dixe I, that in your house there could not want hogs fleth.  
 H. Nor in your house shall there want a knaue while you are within.  
 P. No in truth mistress, but they told me that a while agoe you and cleanlines had been at bate.  
 H. And they told me, that you had banished shamefastnes from your house.  
 M. I am glad Peter that thou hast mette with that thou haddest need of.  
 A. And also she hath need of me.  
 H. I haue neede of him truly, if it be but to put him in \* Peralvillo to shoote twelue arrowes at him with the \* mistress, I know not for what els?  
 P. Now mistress, let vs saie no more, holde your peace and let vs be still, for we haue a quip a peece.  
 H. Go to, make an end babler in graine, & demand that you haue need of.  
 P. Give me haie, and straw, and prouender for the mules.  
 H. How much will you haue?  
 P. Two seues full of haie, and a pecke of barley.  
 H. It is very little for three beastes.  
 P. Heere are no more then two, which is the other?  
 H. The other are you, and more deuouring then the other two.  
 P. If I be more, it is not of straw nor barley, for it is very hard of digestion.  
 H. Harder is a cudgell, and yet it vseth to soften the ribs of a knaue.  
 M. It is well, passe no further forward mistress hostesse, how far doe they count it from hence to the citie?  
 H. Sir five leagues.  
 M. May we ride them betwixt this and night?  
 H. As you shall haften.

M. Is

- M. Ay algun río en el camíno o algun mal passo?  
 V. Por do quiera, ay vna legua de mal camíno.  
 M. Ay adonde herrár?  
 V. El camíno no señór, las mulas si señór, vuestras merçedes mil partes ay donde pueden herrár.  
 M. \* Si son los yerros por amores, dignos son de perdonár.  
 A. Señora huéspedada cuya es ésta venta?  
 V. De vn cavallero de la çiuðad.  
 A. Quanto pagan por ella de arrendamiento en vn año?  
 V. Mas que ella vale, quinientos ducados.  
 M. De ésta fuerte, buena maña se an menester dar a hurtár para facár la costa.  
 P. Éssa no falta, el gáto por liebre, la carne de mula por vaca, el vino pasádo por água todo va de ésta manera.  
 V. \* Mala pasqua de Dios a el vellaco y mal san Iuán. quando ha visto el, esío en mi venta?  
 P. Visto lo no, gustádo lo si.  
 V. Vos mentís como vellaco, que nuncatal.  
 P. \* Aora estémós a quenta huéspedada no demos de comer a el Diabolo, venga acá no se acherda el otro día quando yo vine por aquí con un cavallero, que le pidió le diése un pedáço de carne de aquéllo que le avía dádo otro dia antes quando avía pasádo por aquí, porque dezía que le avía sauido muy bien, lo qual oyendo aquel niño chiquíto, díxo caro nos costaría, si cada dia se nos avía de morir un Roçín.  
 V. Es Verdád que aquéllo fue aquel Roçín que se nos murió, però estáva tan gódo y tan lindo que éra mejor que carne de vaca.  
 M. Señora huéspedada aunque mas lindo sea, no nos dee de el agóra.  
 V. No Señór que ya se acabó, hasta aora avía de durár?  
 M. Vea-
- M. Is there any river in the way, or any euill passage?  
 H. Which way soeuer you goe, there is a league of euill waie.  
 M. Is there any place \* herrár?  
 H. The way, no Sir, the mules, yes Sir, a thousand passages where you may shoote a horse or mule.  
 M. If they be errors for love, they are worthy to be pardoned.  
 A. Mistress hostesse, whose is this inne?  
 H. A gentlemans of the citie.  
 A. How much doe you pay for the hire of it by the yeere?  
 H. More then it is worth, five hundred ducats.  
 M. By this meanes they had neede good skill to steale to get out their charge.  
 P. That skill wants not, a cat for hares fleth, the fleth of a mule for beefe, wine mixed with water, all goes in this manner.  
 H. God send the knaue an ill Easter, and an ill Midsummer, when shall you seee this in my Inn?  
 P. I haue not seene, but I haue tasted it?  
 H. You lie like a knaue, there was neuer any such matter.  
 P. Hostesse we are upon the reckoning now.  
 \* Let vs not giue the diuell his dinner, come hither, doe you not remember the other daie, when I law upon words came this way with a gentleman which requested you to giue him a peece of meate, of that you had giuen him the other day before, when he passed this waie, because he said it liked his taste very well, the which the little child heard, said, it would be deere fleth vnto vs, if every day there should be a nagge.  
 H. It is true, that there was a nagge which died, but hee was so far and so faire, that hee was better then beefe.  
 M. Mistress hostesse, although he might be more fine, giue vs not of that now.  
 H. No sir, for he is already made an end of, what think you it could last til now?  
 M. Let

\* Peralvillo, a mount in Spaine where they shoote malefactors to death.  
 \* i. That arrow which hitteth on the hart.

\* To misse or erre. Also to shoote a horse or mule.

\* Let vs not giue the diuell his dinner, come hither, doe you not remember the other daie, when I law upon words came this way with a gentleman which requested you to giue him a peece of meate, of that you had giuen him the other day before, when he passed this waie, because he said it liked his taste very well, the which the little child heard, said, it would be deere fleth vnto vs, if every day there should be a nagge.

- M. Veámos el vino que tal es.  
 V. El vino es tal, que bálta a llevár al cielo a el, que acostubrarse a beverlo.  
 P. Ola nuestra áma no basta ventera si no erçe?  
 V. Lo que yo digo es verdád y lo provaré que el buen vino, lleva los hombres a el cielo.  
 M. De que manera?  
 V. El buen vino cria buena sangre, la buena sangre engendra buena condición, la buena condición pára buenas obras, las buenas obras, lléván a los hombres a el cielo.  
 M. Ella ha aprobado su yntención bastante.  
 A. Però no se podrá dezir esto por este vino.  
 V. Por que?  
 A. \* Por que esto mas parece vinagre y agua.  
 V. Agua, no por vida de mi ánima, que tiene mas de la, que le echo el de lo alto.  
 M. Pues Dios no le vino a echár agua, que sin agualo crió.  
 P. Bien, no está v.m. en el quento, el de lo alto es su marido, que está en lo alto de la casa, y deide allí, échala agua en el vino, por una cebratana.  
 A. Con vos me entiérren Pedro que sabéis de cuenta.  
 M. Yo entendía que llamáva a Dios, el de lo alto.  
 A. En todas las cosas ay engaño.  
 P. Sino es en la ropa vieja.  
 V. Por cierto que tienen razón, que está ya el mundo muy perdido, por esto nos hémos recogido mi marido y yo a ésta venta, por acabar en buena vida.  
 M. Está llamays buena vida huésped?  
 P. Si Señor, que peor era la de los de Sodómay Gomorra.  
 V. Nole parece a v.m. que es buena vida estár hechos hermitaños en este disyerto, que mas hizieron los padres de el yermo?

P. Y

- M. *Let us see the wine that is so good.*  
 H. *The wine is such, that it is sufficient to bring a man to heaven that shall use to drinke it.*  
 P. *What now Mistressse, is it not ynough to be a keeper of an Inne, except you be an heretike too?*  
 H. *That which I say is true, and I will prouue it, that good wine carrieth men vp to heauen.*  
 M. *How so?*  
 H. *Good wine makes good blood. good blood doth engender good condition, good condition doth ende in good works, good works carrie men to heauen.*  
 M. *She hath proued her intent very sufficiently.*  
 A. *But this cannot bee verified in this wine.*  
 H. *Why?*  
 A. *Because this stemes rather vineger and water.*  
 H. *Water, by the life of my soule, it hath no more water in it, then he from above put in it.*  
 M. *God neuer came to put water into wine, but without water he created it.*  
 P. *Well, you vnderstand not the matter a right. He from above is his husband, which is in the top of the house, and from thence puts water into the wine with a long turnell.*  
 A. *I will die and liue with thee Peter, for thou knowest fashions.*  
 M. *I vnderstode that she had called God, him that was from above.*  
 A. *In enery thing there is deceit.*  
 P. *Except it be in an old garment.*  
 H. *Truely they haue reason, for the worlde is very badde, for this cause haue my husbande and I withdrawen our selues into this Inne to make an end in good life.*  
 M. *Call you this a good life hostesse?*  
 P. *Yea sir, for that of Sodom and Gomorra was woofse.*  
 H. *Do you not thinke that it is a good life to be made Hermites in this desert, what did the fathers in the wildernesses more then this?*

P. And

- P. Y tan virtuosos, que de limónsa, a quantos passan les quitan lo que llévan.  
 V. Quitar, nunca Dios tal quiera, regebir lo que nos dan con cortesía, esto si.  
 P. Es el caso, que llaman cortesía a la gançua, con que abren las viçagas.  
 V. El diablo truxo a éste moço a mi casa, vete con todos los diábolos, espíritu de contradición.  
 P. \* Mal me quieren mis comadres, por que les digo las verdades.  
 M. Aora Pedro, haze quenta con la huésped, y vamos de aquí, que es tarde.  
 P. Que se deve de todo huésped?  
 V. Espérese, contaré, dos de paja, y de paja dos, tres de çebada, çinco de vino, vno de carne y dos de toçino, veynte reales entodo.  
 P. \* Quenta hecha, mula muerta, escudero yos a pie, pues a mi me quere dar papilla señora huésped, \* no save, que quando ella nació, ya yo comía pan con cortéça: espere haré yo la mia.  
 V. Haze, veámos.  
 P. \* Tres y dos son çinco, dos de blanco y tres de tinto, y otros tres de estópas y pez, vno de la ólla y dos de la chólla, y medio de la çebólla, ocho son en todos.  
 V. Malos años para vos, págame aquí, si no, por el figlo de mi padre que os araue ésta cara.  
 P. \* Quitado se ha el gáto la rópa de la ypocrasía, señora hermitaña, tenga paciçncia y no tanta codicia.  
 V. \* No me quente mortuorios, si no pagué me, si no, las bárbas le sacará vna a vna.  
 M. Dale, lo que pidere, la huésped Pedro no riñas con ella.  
 P. En vna não cargáda de plata, no ay háto para contentarla.  
 V. No pido si no lo justo, paga me hermano  
 P. *And so holie that of pure almes, of, as many as passe they take away that they carie.*  
 H. *Take away, God forbid, receiue that they giue vs with curtesie that we doe.*  
 P. *Thus it is, they call the picklocke curtesie, with which they open the mailes.*  
 M. *The diuell brought this seruant to my house, get thee hence in the diuels name, thou spirit of contradiction.*  
 P. *My gossipis cannot abide me, because I speake truth vnto them truely.*  
 M. *Now Peter reckon with the hostesse and let vs begon hence, for it is late.*  
 P. *Hostesse what is owing in the whole?*  
 H. *Tarie I little, I will reckon, two of straw, and of straw two, three of barley, fine of wine, one of flesh, and two of bacon, ten shillings in the whole.*  
 P. *The reckoning made, the mule dead, seruing man get your way a foote why the mistresse hostesse will giue me pap, doth she not knowe, that when she was borne, then did I eat bread with hard crust, tarrie ile make my reckoning.*  
 H. *Make it, let vs see.*  
 P. *Three and two are five, two of sacke & three of wine somewhat blacke, and other three of the hurdes of flaxe and pitch, one of the pot, and two of the \* nowle, and a halfe of the \* The hinder chibbowle, they are eight in the part of the head whole.*  
 H. *What with a mischief to you, paie mee beere; if not, by my fathers soule ile put out thine eyes.*  
 P. *The cat hath cast off the \* garment of \* The cat saying his selfe a hypocrisie, mistris Hermite haue patience, and be not so conetous.*  
 H. *Do not reckon vp mortuaries vnto me, but paie me, if not I will pull off the haire of thy beard one by one.*  
 M. *Giue that which the Hostesse doth require Peter & braul not with hir, when she spied, in a ship loaden with siluer there is not stong off the garment and to them.*  
 P. *I require nothing but my right, pay me brother*

\* All in one  
sing.

P. Anfi dize la picaza, tome señóra ve ay dóze reales, los seis son de buéno, y los seis de mal provécho le hagan.

V. Mas no, si no los seis, son de bien vendidos sean, y los seis de en óra mala váys.

P. \* Maldiciones de putas viejas, oraciones son de salud.

M. Quéde se con Dios Señóra huésped.

V. El váya con vuestras merçedes, a qui está ésta pobre posada para todas las vezes que viniéren este camino, les suplico se sirvan délla.

\* i. Their money.

P. \* Sobre buen haz de pája tía.

V. No, sino por sus ojos bellidos lo harán.

P. Quede con dios tía, y el la haga buena hermitaña.

V. Anda con dios hijo, y el os haga mejor de lo que soys.

Diálogo quinto, entre tres Pájes, llamados el uno Iuan, el otro Francisco, el otro Guzman, en el qual se contienen las ordinarias pláticas que los pájes suelen tener unos con otros.

I. D E donde viénes Francisco?  
F. De la corte Iuan.  
I. Que ay por allá de nuevo?  
F. El rollo se está adonde solía, el Rey ha mandado que quien tuviere que comér, que come, y el otro que ayúne.

I. Víste a la Réyna?  
F. Ala de diamantes con que híze el postter flux.

I. Luego jugado has?

F. Yo no, mis dineros jugaron al trocádo, y trocaron me por otro dueño.

I. Ganáste o perdiste?

F. Gané

brother and leave of words.

P. So saith the \* chaunting Pie, holde mistres, see heere sixe shillings, three of them be much good doe it you with them, and the other three the diuell choake you with them.

H. Not so, but the one three are of welcome unto me, and the other three the diuell go with thee.

P. Cursings of old whoores are prayers of health.

M. God be with you mistres Hostesse.

H. God conduet your worships, heere is this poore linn, for as often as you shall come this way, I entreate you to use it at your command.

P. \* Aunt you do it upon a good sheafe of strawe.

H. No, but onely for your faire looks sir.

P. Aunt God be with you, and make you a good hermit.

H. Farewell sonne, and God make thee better then that thou art.

The fift Dialogue betweene three Pages, called the one of them Iohn, the other Frances, the other Guzman, wherein are contained the ordinarie speeches which pages are wont to haue one with the other.

I. From whence come you Frances?  
F. From the court Iohn.

I. What is the newes there?

F. The gallows is where it was wont to be, the king hath commanded that hee that hath any thing to dinner, that he eate it, and he that hath not that he fast.

I. Have you seene the Queene?

F. The Queene of Diamonds with which I made the last flush.

I. Hast thou now beene at gaming?

F. Not I, my money plaied at exchange, and changed me for another master.

I. Hast thou won or lost?

F. I

F. Gané y perdí.  
I. Como pudo sér?

F. Perdí mis dineros, y gané escarmiento para no jugar mas.

I. No sería pérdida la del dinero, si tu llevasses adelante esse propósito, pero yo digo, que quien hizo, hará.

F. A lo menos mientras me durare el Escozór, no jugaré mas.

I. Esse no te durare mas que hasta llegar de aquí a tu casa, o hasta que tengas mas dineros.

F. Pues yo para que quiero el dinero, tengo de comprar casas, o viñas con ello.

I. Para embiár a tus parientes, o para luzírte con ello.

F. Luzírme o que? malos años, Luzgame el puto de mi amo pues se sirve de mí.

I. Pues piensas que te ha de durár tu amo toda la vida?

F. Dure lo que durare, como cuchar de pan, que quando éste me falte, no faltará otro tan ruyn como el.

I. Y quando seas grande?

F. Estonces ya sabémos el paradero de los pajes, o ala guerra, o a un monasterio, o a la horca.

I. Esto posttero lo le renuncio en tí.

F. Pues pensais vos escáparos por ypo-critar?

I. Hermáno, en mi linaje nunca úvo ninguno ahorcado, no quiero estrenarlo yo.

F. Estrenada os darán la soga, no os penséis por esso.

I. Piensa el ladrón que todós son de su condición, yo hermano no pienso hazer obras por donde la merezca.

F. Pues no as oydo dezír, que el pensar no es saber, esso sin pensar se verná antes que vn colongia.

I. Yo bien c réo, que si yo trato mucho contigo, que tu me procure-rás pegar la tiña, porque vn puerco

F. I haue won and I haue lost.

I. How could that be?

F. I lost my money, and got a warning to play no more.

I. The losse of money should be no losse, if thou didst go forward in this purpose, but I say, that he that hath once plaied will play againe.

F. At the least, while the smarting shall last I will play no more.

I. That will not last with thee longer, then till thou comest home, or untill thou hast more money.

F. What should I doe with money, am I to buy houses or vineyards with it?

I. To send it to thy friends and kinred, or to make thy selfe trim with it.

F. To make my selfe trim? a plague take it, let the buggerey my master trim me seeing he serues himselfe of me.

I. Why thinkest thou thy master is to live with thee for euer?

F. Let him last as long as a spoone of bread, when he is wanting to me, there will not faile another as bad as hee.

I. And when thou art better growen in yeeres?

F. Then we know the end of Pages, either to the warre, or to a monasterie, or to the gallows.

I. This last I leane to thee.

F. Why thinke you to scape because you are an Hypocrite?

I. Brother, in my kinred neuer was there any hanged, I will not hanfell the gallows.

F. They will giue you a halter for hanfell, take you no care for that.

I. Well thinke the theefe, that all are as himselfe, I brother do not thinke to doe any thing that I may deserue the gallows.

F. But hast thou not heard saie, that opinion is no knowledge, this without thinking will come sooner then a canonship.

I. I well beleene, that if I deale much with thee, thou wilt infect me with mangines, for one hog that hath  
n 2  
swallowed

- puero encenagado, siempre procura encenagar a otro.
- F. Dizes verdad, que si el ladrón anda con el hermitaño, o el ladrón será hermitaño, o el hermitaño ladrón, pero tu nunca juegas?
- I. Yo no en mi vida.
- F. Pues tente bien no cáygas, porque a fee que si cáes, que as de ser como los borrachos que comienzan tarde a ser lo, que por esquitarse de lo que han dexado de bever, nunca salen de cueros.
- I. Si Dios me guarde mi júyzio, yo me guardaré desse vicio.
- F. Mas fuerte era Troya, y fue destruyda.
- I. Dexámos esso agora, y dime como te va con tu amo?
- F. A mi muy bien, porque como es moço, galán, y enamorado, son tres cosas que lácán de haron almas cuerdo, y así todo se nos va en fiestas, una librea cy, otra mañana, siempre en faras, músicas, y danças, siempre en combites, que mal año para Lançarote quando de Bretaña vino, si era tan bien tratado como nosotros.
- I. Si però a fee que créo, que tras buen bocado, dais buen grito.
- F. Porque dizes esso?
- I. Porque me parece que si vuestro amo dança de la manera, vosotros no avéys d'estár ociosos, sino que avéys de çapateár, porque en casa del músico, todos los criados son dançantes.
- F. Es verdad que esso a cosadillos, nos trae de dia con recaudos, y de noche con rondas, però con el buen peçebre, todo se passa y no como tu que estás serviendo a vn pelón, que te deve matár de hambre.
- I. No mata, porque yo nunca tuve vida, despues que estoy con el.
- F. No tiene buen ordinario?
- I. La
- Dialogues.
- allow'd in the mire will beray another.*
- F. *Thou sayest true, for if a theefe keepe companie with a hermit, either a theefe shall become a hermit, or a hermit a theefe, but dost thou neuer play?*
- I. *I neuer in my life.*
- F. *Then hold fast, fall not, for in faith if thou fallest, thou art like to be as drunken men, which beginne at length so to be, which to quitt themselves of that they haue left to drinke, they neuer get out of drunkenness.*
- I. *If God keepe me in my right minde, I will keepe my selfe from this vice.*
- F. *Troy was more strong, and yet was overcome.*
- I. *Let vs leaue this now, and tell me how your master and you agree?*
- F. *I like very well of him, for he is young, gallant, and in love, they are three things which busie the wisest man, & so we are altogether in feasting, one livery to day, another to morrow, neuer without good cheere, musike, daunces, and banquets, that the diuill take Lançarote when he came from Brittain if he were so well entreated as we are.*
- I. *Yea, but in faith I beleuee that after a good morsell, you paie well for it.*
- F. *Why saiest thou so?*
- I. *For I thinke, that if your master daunce in such sort, you are not altogether idle, but that you foote it too, for in a musitions house all the seruants are dauncers.*
- F. *It is true, that by reason of this lone small occasions drine vs in the day time with letters, and in the night we round the street, but with good fare we passe ouer all this, and not as thou dost which seruest a miserable wretch, which killeth thee with hunger.*
- I. *He kils me not, for I neuer had life since I came to him.*
- F. *Hath he not a good ordinarie table?*
- I. *Wretched.*

- I. La lazéria es ordinaria en cáa.
- F. Que os da a comer?
- I. Esperanças y folias.
- F. Con esso estás tan gordo?
- I. De los Tovillos si estoy.
- F. Dalle cantonada.
- I. Temo de encontrar otro peor, y no querria por huír de la llama dar en las bráfas.
- F. Haz te cuchillo de melonero, provár muchos hasta hallar uno bueno.
- I. Luego cobra hombre mala fama, y le dicen Piedra movediza no la cobre móho, y todo el mundo le da del cobdo.
- F. No sino dexáos secár como palo en farmentera.
- I. Adonde vas tu agora?
- F. A buscár mi amo, y temo que no le tengo de poder hallar.
- I. Adonde le perdiste?
- F. Yo no le perdí, el se perdió muchas dias ha.
- I. Así yrá un perdido a buscár otro perdido, como un duelo busca otro duelo, y una necesidad a otra, porque *Pares cum paribus facillime congregantur.*
- F. Bendito sea Dios, que por tres blancas de gramática que estudio, ya no se cabe en el cuerpo, y no véa la ora que desembuchar lo.
- I. Digo hermano que cada obéja con su paréja, y vn semijante busca a otro.
- F. Así tu amo como es miserable pelón, busca vn ypócrita como tu, a quien con dezille que es menester ayunar para yr al ciclo, te tiene en dicta perpétua, y canoniza por virtud, lo que es miseria fina.
- I. Notienes razón, que el no es avariéto, però como dizen Pobréza no es vileza.
- F. No, mas es maestra que enseña como se ha de hazer.
- I. Yo se, que si mi amo tuviere la renta del

- I. *Wretchednesse it selfe is his ordinarie provision in house.*
- F. *What diet doth he giue you?*
- I. *Hopes and songs.*
- F. *And with this art thou so fat?*
- I. *If I be fat, it is in my ankle bones.*
- F. *Run away from him.*
- I. *I am afraid to meete with a worse, and I would not leape out of the frying pan, and fall into the fire.*
- F. *Make of thy selfe a knife to cut pumpions, procure many until you finde one good.*
- I. *Straightway a man gets an ill name, and they say a rolling stone gathereth no mosse, and euery one instleth him a side.*
- F. *No but suffer your selfe to drie as stickes on a pile or heape.*
- I. *Whither goest thou now?*
- F. *To seeke my master, and I feare that I shall not finde him.*
- I. *Where didst thou lose him?*
- F. *I lost him not, he lost himselfe a great while agoe.*
- I. *So one that is lost himselfe, goeth to seeke another that is lost, as one greefe seekes another greefe, and one folly another: for like will to like.*
- F. *God be blessed, that for \* three blankes \* A blanke of Grammar which he hath studied, now he cannot keepe it in his venter, a Marabell, and he thinks euerie howe venter 34. of them to fixe pence.*
- I. *I say brother, euerie sheepe with his equall, and like will to like.*
- F. *So thy master as he is a miserable wretch seekes out an hypocrite like thy selfe, and by telling thee how requisite it is to fast for the winning of heauen doth holde thee in continuall diet, and extols that for a vertue, which is pure miserablenes.*
- I. *You saie not well, for he is not couetous, but as it is saide, Pouertie is not vilenes.*
- F. *No, but it is a mistress which doth teach vs how we should become nigardly.*
- I. *I know, if my master had rentnes as thy master*



del tuyo que gastára mas que el, lo qual el nos dize que hará muy complidamente si dios le mejora d'estado.

F. De manera que éssas son las esperanças que coméis.

I. Mas vale que agua, como dezía la veja que mojáva el sarmiento en el río y le chupáva.

F. Con éssa comida no dubdo dexéis de salir buénos girifáltes al cabo del año.

I. Siperó, si bolamos tan alto, llevárnos ha el viento, como haze a todos los que se sustentan de seme-jante manjar.

F. Por vida de tu madre, que renta tié-ne tu ámo?

I. Yote lo diré vn quento de mentíras, y otro de necesidádes, y vn millón de necedádes, y todo ésto se gasta cada año, de fuerte, que viene a salir a rata por can-tidad.

F. Quantos cavállos tiene?

I. Dize que cinco con quatro que se le an muerto.

F. Quantos criados?

I. Nones son, y no llégan a tres.

F. De fuerte que tu solo le sirves.

I. Y aun me podrían açotár por vaga-mundo.

F. Pues como siendo sólo, no tienes mu-cho en que entender.

I. Si tengo, en contar lástimas y cala-midades.

F. Quando tiempo ha que bives con el?

I. Que muéro con el muchos dias ha.

F. Hermáno hermano, quien si mude Dios le ayude.

I. Si, mas adonde yrá el buey que no áre, por donde quiera veo cien leguas de mal camino.

F. Aquí viene Guzmanillo, veámos que nuevas trae, a Guzman que ay de nuevo?

G. Muchas cosas, el Turco (dizen que) se ha tornado Moro, que Venecia nada en agua, y que Ytalia está llena de hombres, que en Frán-

cia

master hath, that hee would spend more then he doth, which hee tel- leth us he will performe with the best, if it please God so better his estate.

F. So then these bee the hopes which you feede on.

I. It is better then water, as the olde wo- man saide, which dipped a dry stick in the river and sucked it.

F. With this diet I doubt not but at the yeeres end you may proove good.

I. Yeabut if we sue so high, the winde will carie vs away, as it doth all those which do feede on such diet.

F. By the life of thy mother, what reueneue hath thy master?

I. I will tell thee, a thousand thousandes of lies, and another of needs, a milli- on of fooleries, and all this is spent euery yeere in such sort, that hee spends as much as comes in to him.

F. How many horses hath he?

I. He saith five, with those fower which are dead.

F. How many seruants?

I. They are odde, and yet they mount not to three.

F. So then thou alone seruest him.

I. \* And yet might they whip me for a va- gabond.

F. How so, seeing thou art alone thou hast not much to imploy thy selfe on.

I. But I haue much to do to reckon greeses and calamities.

F. How long hast thou liued with him?

I. I haue been \* dying with him long since.

F. Brother, brother, God wil him helpe, that seekes for it himselte.

I. Yea, but where shall the oxe goe that he shall not labour, which way soeuer I see a hundred leagues of ill way.

F. Heere comes little Guzman, let vs see what newes hee brings. Hoe Guzman what newes?

G. Many things, the Turke (as they say) is become a Moore or insidall, \* Venice swims in water, & Italie is full of people, and that in France there

cia ay mas de cien mil hombres de guerra, y tambien se dize de secreto que el conde de Flan- des a dormido con la Reyna de España.

F. Todo ésto ay de nuevo?

G. Aora vinieron con este correo éstas nuévas.

F. De luengas vías luengas mentíras suelen venir.

G. Lo que yo os he dicho, todo estan verdad, como ler aora de día.

F. Luego grandes guerras se aparéjan éste veráno.

G. Los pronósticos dizen, quéste verá- no los que biviéren, verán gran- des maravillas.

F. Que maravillas serán, cuenta nos las.

G. Dizen que el sol será mayor que to- da la tierra.

F. Santo Dios, y ésto ha de sér verdad?

G. Y que la luna cada noche aparéce de su manera, que las estrellas sino fuesse por el sol no ternán re- splandór ninguno, que los ríos corren a la már, que arderán mu- chos montes, que avrá grande mortandád de todo género de ganados, y en todas las ciudádas avrá unos mónstruos que echa- rán llamas por la boca, y los hom- bres que no comiéron lo que éstos vomitáren, morirán.

F. Vala me Dios, yo pienso que todo ésto es mentíra.

G. Los Pronósticos dizen, que el sol y la luna faltarán, antes que to- das éstas cosas fálten.

F. Dessa manera, todos los hombres morirán, porque quien ha de comer lo que vomitáren los mónstruos?

G. Pues as tu comido vn afno enté- ro, y no comerás de aquello?

F. Si yo soy afno, vos soys mula.

G. Xo que te eñtriégo que lárgas le na- ciéron a v.m.

F. Tan lárgas como sus narizes.

G. Va a véra a tu tía Hermáno?

F. No que ya ví a tu madre, en la pel- lejería.

there are more then a hundred thousand men of armes, and also they say in secret, that the \* Earle of Flandres hath lien with the Queene of Spaine.

F. Is there all this newes?

G. These newes came now with this poste.

F. Farre fetched lies come from farre.

G. That which I haue told you is as true as it is now day light.

F. Then great warres are like to bee this sommer.

G. The Prognostications say, those that shall liue this sommer shall see great woonders.

F. What shall those woonders be, I pray thee tell them vs.

G. They say the sun shall be bigger then all the earth.

F. Blessed God, and will this prooue true?

G. And that the moone euery night doth appeere after hir old fashion, that the \* starres if it were not for the \* As mount sunne, should haue no light, that all \* Aetna in Sici- riuers run into the sea, that manie lie and others \* mountains shall burne, that there ally cast out fire and brimstone, shall be a great slaughter of al kind of \* castell, and in all cities there shall be monsters which shall cast \* For mans \* out fire at the mouth, and those meate to eate. men which shal not eat that which \* i. Ouens when in they bake these monsters shall vomite, they breade.

F. God helpe me, I thinke al this to be a lie.

G. The Prognostications say that the sun and the moone shall faile of their courses rather then these shinges to faile.

F. By this meanes, all men shall die for who can eat that which these monsters shall vomit?

G. Why hast thou swallowed downe an \* asse whole, and wilt not eat of it?

F. If I be an asse thou art a mule.

G. \* Ho I do rub thee, for they are sprung vp verie \* long to your worship.

F. So long as your nose.

G. Go you to see your aunts brother?

F. Not so, for I saw thy mother in a brothel house.

\* The king of Spaine in his title Earle of Flandres.

\* i. Starres receive their light of the sunne.

\* As mount Aetna in Sici-

riuers run into the sea, that manie lie and others

\* mountains shall burne, that there ally cast out fire and brimstone,

shall be a great slaughter of al kind of \* castell, and in all cities there shall be monsters which shall cast

\* For mans \* out fire at the mouth, and those meate to eate.

men which shal not eat that which \* i. Ouens when in they bake these monsters shall vomite, they breade.

\* Made a gull. \* Hoc, a voice that catters use to make their

horses stand still.

\* i. Long eares, calling him thereby asse.

\* Calling of him by this a lewe, which for the most part haue long noses.

\* i. With this diet you may be light enough to flie.

\* i. In going up and downe shif- ting for my self, and not liuing on my master.

\* i. of hunger.

\* i. Stands built upon the sea, the sea compassing it round about.

- \* Ha eñ Ral-  
lame, then it is  
Grate me, and  
Harrallá  
then it is haight  
that way as one  
saith to an  
affe.
- G. \* Harrallame esse quéfo.  
F. Harrallame esse aña.  
G. Toda la vida has de comer sin pláto?  
F. Toda la vida has de comer tu cabrón?  
G. O Dios te bendiga la bella alimaña.  
F. O Dios te despache déite mundo para el otro.  
G. Dízen me que es v.m. gran comedor de huévos asfados.  
F. Tambien me han dicho a mi que v.m. come muy bien bacaláo.  
G. O si todos los años truxeran albardas, que buen oficio era el, de los albarderos.  
F. Si esso fuere así, vna mas tenía de coita vuestro año cada mcs.  
G. Si del nécio se uviéra de pagar alcavala, quanto ganáran los Alcavaleros con v.m?  
F. En éssa hazienda nádie podria traxer, porque dizque es patrimonio de v.m.  
G. Todo es de vn pedágov.m.  
F. Si, pero es de aguijón para picára v.m.  
G. Mas no créo que es sino de atun de yjada.  
F. Si de atun fuéra ya v.m. uviéra arremetido a la pieça, como el asno a la cevada.  
G. Parece me hermano que aunque tu entráste en la corte, nunca la corte entró en ti.  
F. En la de los puércos concédo, porque como estu jurisdicción, no se háze en ella, sino lo que tu ordénas.  
G. Por vida tuya que me digas, quantos curios tienes de nécio.  
F. Los mismos que vos de majadéro.  
G. Yo pienso, que éras ya doctór en ynsenlato.  
F. Y vos estáys graduáo por cavalleriza.  
G. A Dios hermano, y roe bien éssos grançones.

F. Y

- house.  
G. Grate me this cheefe.  
F. Haight that way this affe.  
G. What art thou to eate thy meate all thy life without a platter?  
F. Art thou to eate all thy life of goates flesh?  
G. O God blesse thee faire beast.  
F. O God rid thee out of this world into the other.  
G. They tell me that you are a great eater of hard egges.  
F. Also they tell mee that you eate verie well poore lobb.  
G. O if all asses should carrie pack-saddles, what a good trade should the pack-sadler haue.  
F. If it were so, your master should be at the charge of one packe-saddle more every moneth.  
G. If there should be subsidies gathered up of every foole, how much would the gatherers of the subsidies put into their purse with your worship?  
F. In this goods none could meddle, because it is saide it is your patrimonie.  
G. All your worship is one peece.  
F. Yea, but it is a pricke to stirre you forward.  
G. But I beleue it not but that is a peece of a Tunnie fish of the bellie side.  
F. If it were of a Tunnie fish you had set upon a peece of it as greedilie as an asse on the prouender.  
G. It seemes to me brother, although thou entredst into the court, the court neuer entred vnto thee.  
F. In that of hogs I graunt, for as it is thy iurisdiction, there is nothing done therein but that thou dost appoint.  
G. I pray thee tell me how many degrees of a foole hast thou?  
F. As many as thou hast of a ioutthead.  
G. I thinke thou wast doctór in sencelessness.  
F. And you taken degree in the stable.  
G. Farewell brother, and gnaw well these buakes.

F. And

- F. Y rumiád vos como buen cabrón éfotros.  
I. Par diez, bueno te ha parado el amigo.  
F. Amigo lerá el de vna taça de vino.  
I. Éste es de los que aconsejáva el ósfo, que hizicsemos poco caso.  
F. Como es esse quento?  
I. Quenta yfópo, que vna vez dos amigos ván camino a pie, por vn monte, y salió a ellos vn ósfo, el vno echando mano a su espada, se quiso defendér a sí y a su compañero, al qual dixo que hizicse lo mismo, para que ni el vno ni el otro muriessen, el compañero que tenía mas cuenta con su salud, que con el del otro, a trevióse antes a sus pies, que a sus manos, y no curando del compañero, dio a huyr a vn árbol alto que allí vido, y se subió en el, donde estuvo seguro del peligro. El compañero visto que el solo no se podía defendérse del ósfo, se dexó caer en tierra haziendo muéstras de que estava muerto, tenía el huelgo y no resolláva mientras el ósfo llegó y le olió todo, las narizes y la boca, y los oydos, y pensando que estava muerto, se fue de allí, sin hazérle ningun daño. El que estava en el árbol, visto que el ósfo era ydo, baxó del, y pregunto a su compañero, que era aquello que el ósfo le avía dicho al oydo: El otro respondió, dezíame que con tan ruynes compañeros como vos, nunca hizicse camino otra vez.

- F. Respondió muy discretamente, y si yo lo supiera antes, uviéra le contádo esse quento a estotro mierda en palillo, que pienfa que sabe mas que Bártulo ni Baldo.  
I. Por cierto el tuvo demasiada razón, amotejarte de nécio pues estuviste

- F. And bronsé you as a good he-goat thefe others.  
I. By ten, thy friend hath brought thee to a good passe.  
F. He will rather prooue a friend to a cup of wine.  
I. This is such a friend that the beare counselléd that we should make but little reckoning of.  
F. How is that tale?  
I. Aslope tels, that on a time two friends travelled a foote together, and going by a wood, a beare came out to them, the one laying hand on his sword meant to defend himselfe, and his companion whom he willed that he should doe the like, that neither one of them nor the other might not miscarrie; his companion which made more account of his owne safetie then his fellows, was more bolde upon his feete then upon his hands, and not respecting his fellow, betooke himselfe to fly to a high tree which there he sawe, and climed up the same, where he was safe from the danger. His companion seeing that alone he could not defend himselfe from the beare, cast himselfe downe on the ground, making shewes that he was dead, he held his breath, and did not once blowe while the beare came and smelt him round, his nose and his mouth, and his eares, thinking he had been dead went his way, without doing him any harme. He that was in the tree, seeing that the beare was gone, came downe the tree, and asked his fellow what was that that the beare had told him in his eare: The other answered, he told me that with such bad companions as your selfe I neuer should travel againe.  
F. He answered verie well, and if I had knowne it before, I would haue told this tale to this turd upon a stick, which thinks hee knowes more then Bartulus or Baldus.  
I. Truly hee had too much cause to scoffe at thee for a foole, seeing thou

viste tan torpe que no entendiste sus pronósticos y adivinanzas.

F. Pues tu entiendes las mejor?

I. Yo entiendo las como el las dixo.

F. Pues yo bien creo que entiendo Romance, y el en Romance hablaba que no en algaravia.

I. Pues quieres ver como debáxo del sayál ayál: y que aun que te habló en español, es algaravia de allende para ti.

F. Ya lo deséo ver como es.

I. Pues lo primero que dixo que el Turco se ha tornado móro, es lo el de profesiôn y de ley, y fúelo siempre: todos siguen la feta de Mahoma. Que Venécia náda en água, es verdád que está fundada en la már, que Ytalia está llena de hombres, tambien es verdád como Ynglatiérta lo está, Tambien que en Fráncia, ay mas de cien mil hombres de guerra, quien no lo sábe que quando el Rey quiera, podrá fácar della mas de dozientos mil.

F. Todo ésto bien lo entiendo yo, però lo de más, como se puede entender, que el conde de Flandes aya dormido con la Rcyna despaña y no se anda el mundo en guerras.

I. Pues bobo no sábes tu, que el conde de flandes y el rey despaña es todo una própria persona.

F. Juro a tal, que tiene razón, que no avia yo caydo en ello.

I. Pues lo demas que dize que el sol es mayor que toda la tierra, es muy gran verdád, según demonstraciones astrológicas, que yo con sabér poco te las pudiera dar a entender, si uviéra lugar. Que la luna aparecerá cada noche de su manera, ésto tu lo véas cada dia con sus crecienças y menguanças, nunca está una noche, como estúvo otra: pues que arderán muchos montes, tambien es verdád, que ay en el mundo muchos que

*thou wert so dull that thou understoodst not his prognostications and diuinings.*

F. *Doeſt thou then understand them better?*

I. *I understand them as he spake them?*

F. *But I beleue well that I understand Spanish, and he spake in Spanish and not in the Moores toong.*

I. *But wilt thou see, how under counſe attire is some wiſedome, & alibough he spake Spanish it is the Moores toong to thee.*

F. *I deſire to ſee how it is.*

I. *The firſt then that hee ſaide, that the Turke is become a Moore or an Infidell, he is ſo by his profeſſion and law, and alwaies hath bene: all follow the ſett of Mahomet. That Venice doth ſwim in water, it is true, for it is built in the ſea: that Italy is full of men, alſo it is true as England is: alſo that in France are more then a hundred thousand men of armes, who knowes it not, that when the king will, hee may drave out thereof more then two hundred thousand.*

F. *All this I underſtand well, but the reſt how is it to be underſtoode, that the earle of Flaunders hath lien with the Queene of Spain, and the world not to be vp in armes.*

I. *Why fooles doeſt not know, that the earle of Flaunders and the king of Spaine is all one perſon.*

F. *I ſweare by ſuch a one, hee ſaith true that I did not light vpon.*

I. *But theret, which he ſaith, that the ſun is bigger then the whole earth, is very true, according to aſtrological demonstrations, which I in knowing but a little coulde eaſlie make thee underſtand, if there were time and place, that the moone will appeere as it was wont, that thou ſeeſt continually with her waxing and waning, ſhe is neuer one night as ſhe was the other night, then that many mountaines ſhall burne, alſo it is true, for there be many*

que llaman Bolcánes, como el de Sicilia, que siempre está ardiendo. Que morirá mucho ganado, quien lo ygnóra que lo han de matár los hombres para comér.

F. Todo ésto entiendo bien, però aquellos de aquellos monítruos, que echarán llamas por la boca, y que hémos de comér lo que ellos vomitáren, no puedo y pensar que sea.

I. Ésto es mas fácil que éfótro, porque aquellos monítruos, son los hornos ado se cueze el pan, que échan llamas, y por la boca vomitan el pan que comémos.

F. Aora digo que tienes razón, y que yo estáva en bábia, y que puede vn nécio con vna necesidad forjada en su ymaginación dár en que entender a cien sábios.

I. Así le a aconteció al poeta Oméro, que como con la vejez estuviéle ciego y se anduviéle paseando por la orilla de la már, y oyó hablar a ciertos pescadores, que en aquel punto se estávan eſpulgando, y como les preguntáſſe que pesca hazían, ellos entendiendo por los piójos, respondiéron los que tenémos buscámos y los que no tenemos hallámos, pues como el buen Oméro no viéſſe lo que ellos hazían, y por ésta causa no entendiéſſe la Enígma, fue tanto lo que fatigó su ymaginación y entendimiento, por entender la y alcançar el secreto dello, que fue bastante ésta pesadumbre a hazer le morir.

F. El lo hizo no como sabio, sino como muy gran nécio, en martarse por lo, que no podía alcançar.

I. Yo bien creo que no morirás tu deſe acháque.

F. No hermánó, que no páre ya mi madre, y yo contento me con lo que buenamente y sin mucho trabajo

*many in the worlde, as mount Aina in Sicilie, which alwaies burnes, &c. that there ſhall bee a great ſlaughter of cattell who is ignorant thereof, for men are to kill them for to eate them.*

F. *All this I underſtande well, but that of thoſe monſters, which ſhall caſt out flames out of their mouthes, and that we ſhall eate of that they ſhall vomite, I cannot thinke what it may be.*

I. *This is more eaſie then the other, for thoſe monſters are ouens, where they bake bread which caſt out fire, and by the mouth of it, it vomiterh the bread which we eate.*

F. *Now I ſay you ſay true, and that I was in foolerie, and that a foole with his fooliſhnes framed in his owne imagination may giue to a hundred wiſe men matter to picke out.*

I. *So it happened to the Poet Homer, that as he was with age blinde and went walking by the ſea ſhoare, and heard certaine fiſhermen talking, that at that time were a loſing themſelues, & as he asked them, what fiſh they caught, they underſtanding that he had meant their liſe, they answered, thoſe that we \* haue, we ſeeke for, \* i. Haue in their clothes, i. and thoſe that we \* haue not we find, \* i. lice. but as the good Homer, coulde not ſee what they did, and for this cauſe could not underſtand the riddle, it did ſo greene his underſtanding to obtaine the ſecret of this matter, which was a ſufficient greefe to cauſe his death.*

F. *He did that not as a wiſe man, but as a very great foole, in caſting awaie himſelfe for that he coulde not reach vnto.*

I. *I well beleue thou wouldeſt not die for ſuch a matter.*

F. *No brother, for my mother is paſt child bearing, and I content my ſelfe with that I may well and without much*

I. \* Pues quien no es mas de otro, no meréce mas que otro, y quien no fáve no vále, y quien ruyn es en su villa, ruyn es en Sevilla, y quien adelante no mira atras se hálala.

F. Yo hermano, quiero andar por do anda el buey, y asentár el pie llano, no tomar de las cosas mas de aquello que me diéron, y porque quiero del mundo gozár, quiero oír, y vér y callár.

Diálogo sexto, que passó entre dos amigos Ingleses y dos Españoles, que se juntaron en la lónja de Lóndres, en el qual se tratan muchas cosas curiosas, y de guiso, son los Ingleses Egidio y Guillérmo, los Españoles Diego y Alonso.

E. Q Ve hazéis Guillermo?

G. Ya lo veis Exidio.

E. Como citáys tan ocioso?

G. \* Quia nemo me conducit.

E. Pues yo os conbido aun ráto de buena converçación.

G. Adónde?

E. Venid os conmigo, no yréys adonde yo os llevare?

G. Si me lo dezís priméro, porque yr hombre, sin fáver adonde, sería neçedád.

E. Luego no hazéis confíança de mí?

G. Si hago, mas no fávéis que no todos los umóres son unos, y que podrá ser, lo que a vos os da guiso, enfadar me a mí.

E. Si, però yo conózco ya vuestro umór, y me acomódo con el.

G. Con todo çllo, dezidme adonde me lleváys.

E. Vámos a la lónja, adonde me están esperando dos amigos Españoles, muy discretos, gustaréis de su buena converçación.

G. Háblan

*much labour reach unto.*

I. *But hee that is not more then another doth deserve no more then another, and hee that hath not knowledge, is of no worth, and he that in his owne towne is vile, and is also bad and naught in Seville, and he that looks not before he leape may fall into the ditch.*

F. *Brother, I will go where the ox hath trodden, and set downe my foote softe and faire, not to take more matters then that they shall give mee, and because I will live in rest I will heare and see and hold my peace.*

*The sixth Dialogue which passed between two friends Englishmen, and two Spaniards, which met upon the Exchange in London: wherein are handled many curious matters, and delightful: the English men are named Giles and William, the Spaniards James and Alonso.*

G. *What do you William?*

W. *You euen see Giles.*

G. *Why are you so idle?*

W. *Because no man hath hired me.*

G. *Then I invite you for a while into good companie?*

W. *Whither?*

G. *Come with me, will you not go whither I shall leade you?*

W. *If you tell me first, for it were follie for a man to go hee knowes not whither.*

G. *Do you not now trust me?*

W. *Yes I do trust you, but do you not knowe, that all humours are not one, and it may be, that which likes you may very much displease me.*

G. *Yea, but I know your humour, and I do apply my selfe unto it.*

W. *But for all this, tell me whither you carrie me.*

G. *Let us goe to the Exchange where two Spaniards very discrete men my friends are tarrying for me, you shall have a taste of their good conversation.*

W. *Speake*

G. Háblan ynglés?

E. Un poquito, però pues vos entendís bien el Español, y yo tan bien no ympórtá.

G. Huelgo me de yr, aunque no sea, mas de por aprender algunas buenas frásis Española.

E. Ellas sé yo que las tienen buenas, porque son de Toledo donde es la prima de la lengua Española.

G. Son por ventúra aquéllos, que se andan allí passeando.

E. Los propios, vámos allá, Dios guarde a vuestras mercedes.

D. Y venga con vuestras mercedes.

E. Pásse adelante la converçación de que se tratáva aóra.

D. No parece sino que la entendís, que respondís a ella sin daros el pie.

A. Tratávamos de las salutations, que se úsan en Inglaterra, y de las que se úsan en España.

G. Quales son mejores?

A. Cierto en esto, adonde quiera, ay abusos, quando dize el español Dios os guarde, en ora buena estéys, Dios os de salud, y el Yngles buenas tardes y otras semejantes yo apruévola por buena salutación.

G. Pues el mundo la repruéva, y tienen por tóscos a los que la úsan.

A. Ya un por esto se dize, que anda el mundo a el rebéz, y no ay mejor señal de que ello es bueno, de vér que el mundo lo repruéba.

G. De las demas salutations que os parece?

A. De las de mas digo, que quando el Yngles pregunta a el otro, como estáys, dize una gran neçedád, y quando el Español dize béfo os las manos, dize una gran mentira.

G. Menester es que déys razón, de vuestra nueva opinión.

A. Aóra dezíme por vuestra vida, no os parece neçedád a el que vos veys bueno preguntár le como está?

G. Tenéys

W. *Speake they English?*

G. *A very little, but seeing you understand well the Spanish and I also, it makes no matter.*

W. *I am glad to goe, though it be but to learne some good Spanish phrases.*

G. *Those I knowe they have and good ones, because they are of Toledo where is the prime of the Spanish too.*

W. *They are peradventure those which goe there walking.*

G. *The very same, let us goe meete them, God save your worships.*

I. *And welcome in Gods name.*

G. *Proceede in that conference which passed betwixt you.*

I. *It seemes that you understood it, that you made answer to it without giving\* you the qu.*

A. *We entreated of the salutations which are used in England, and of those which are used in Spaine.*

W. *Which are better?*

A. *Truely in that matter, there are abuses on both parts, when the Spaniard saith God keepe you, a good houre have you, God give you health: and the Englishman God den, or good euen, and the other like, I allow it for good salutation.*

W. *But generally it is disallowed, and they hold them rude that use it.*

A. *And therefore it is saide, the world goes quite contrarie, and there is no better signe that it is good, then to see it disallowed in the world.*

W. *And of the other salutations what think you?*

A. *Of the rest I saie, that when the Englishman doth aske the other, how\* he doth, he utters his owne simplicity, and when the Spaniard saith, I kisse your handes, hee telleth a great lie.*

W. *You must give a reason of your newe opinion.*

A. *Now tell me I pray you, doth it not seeme unto you a simplicitie, to aske a man whom you see well, how he doth?*

G. You

\* As in plaies one takes the last word of anothers speech, and by that knowes when to speake.

\* The Spaniard alloweth not how do you, but how doth your worship or mastership.

- G. Tenéis razón, pero podría tener algún mal secreto que no se le eche de ver.
- A. Entonces que remediais vos, con preguntarle como está, No sería mejor, rogár a Dios, que le de salud, como haze el otro.
- G. Ahora decídl o de el Español.
- A. El Español digo, que dizé mas mentiras entre año en este caso, que reñes da por Dios, porque dezir a el que encuentra, vñs las manos a v. m. si habla de presente, bien vemos, que miente, pues no se las besa, si de futuro tambien porque bien sabemos, que quando el otro quisiese dar se las por muy amigo que fuesse no se las querría el besar.
- G. Si pero parece que es vna manera de reconocimiento de superioridad a el que dize.
- A. Así es, pero esse reconocimiento no está mas que en la lengua por que el refran dize, manos besa hombre que querría ver cortadas.
- G. Yo os dire lo que sucedió al propósito, a vn cavallero vñs español, con otro moço y fue, que como el moço por buena criança, le dixo a el vñs suplico a v. m. me de las manos, que se las quiero besar el vñs confiado en su ançianía, las alargó para que se las besasse, el otro ya arrepentido se las asió con las suyas y con muy buen donaire le dixo senór yo y v. m. a otros dos.
- G. El moço andúvo discreto en hazér lo así, y el vñs néçio, porque bien favimos, que palábras de buena criança no obligan.
- D. Ansi es verdad, que esta çerimónia de besar la mano, solo la deve el vasallo a el senór.
- A. Esta sola salua guarda tiene nuestra costumbre
- G. You saie well, but he may haue some inward griefe, which appeereith not outwardely.
- A. Then what remedie do you giue him in asking him how he doth, were it not better to pray to God to send him helth as the other doth.
- W. Now tell that of the Spaniard.
- A. The Spaniard I say in this case telleth more lies within the yeere, then he giues sixpences for God sake, for to say to one, that he meeteth I kisse the handes of your worship, if he speake of the time present, we well see that he lieth seeing he doth not kisse them: if of the time to come, in like manner; for we well know when the other would giue him his hands to kisse, if he were neuer so great a friend, yet he would not kisse them.
- W. Yea but it seemeth that it is a manner of acknowledging of superiority to him, to whom it is spoken.
- A. So it is, but this acknowledging is no more, but in the toong: for the proverbe saith, A man kisseth those hands that he would see cut off.
- I. I will tell you that which happened for this matter, to an ancient gentleman, a Spaniard, with another young man; and it was, as the young man for manners sake saide to the old man, I entreate your worship that you will giue me your hands, for I will kisse them: the olde man presuming upon his yeeres, put them out that he might kisse them, the other repenting, tooke him fast by the handes with his owne handes, and with very good pleasantnes, said vnto him, Sir, I and your worship against other two.
- W. The young man was wise in so doing, and the olde man simple, for well we knowe that wordes of compliment binde not.
- I. It is true, this ceremonie of kissing the hand onely the vassall oweth vnto his Lord.
- A. This safegard hath our custome, that with

- costumbre que con dezir, beño a v. m. las manos, parece que es dezir, reconosco a v. m. por mi Senór, y yo por vuestro vasallo.
- E. Y que os parece de esta costumbre, que tenemos en ynglaterra de asir nos las manos vnos otros?
- A. Dos manos asidas, siempre fue simbolo de amistad, pero dar los tirónes, que aqui se dan vno a otro, tengo lo por poca gravedad, y no sé si diga por livianidad.
- E. Antes parece que aquello es por mas confirmación de la amistad.
- A. Esta confirmación ha de ser con obras, y no con ademanes ni tirónes, quanto mas que deve aver muchos que con la mano asida y tirando, le deven de estar con el coraçón matando le.
- G. Que dizis de la otra de besar los hombres a las mugeres publicamente.
- A. Esta costumbre tuvo su principio en Róma, en el tiempo que ella floreçia, aunque se ynventó a diferente propósito de el que aóra se usa.
- G. A que fin la ynventaron?
- A. Los Romanos aboreçian tanto el vino en las mugeres, que tenían ley, en que condenáva a muerte ala que lo bevia, y porque no lo pudiesen hazer alcódidamente, tenían ligénçia sus parientes de besar la, para que por el olfato conosciessen, si lo avia bevido.
- G. Si aóra se viesien de matár todas las que lo beven, yo veo que quedáramos sin mugeres.
- E. No créo, que fuera muy gran pérdida, segun nos son causa de males.
- G. Yo para mi tengo, que la mayor causa de la desoluçion en algunas mugeres de Ynglaterra es esta costumbre de besarlos en publico, por que con esto pierden la
- 51
- with saying, I kisse the handes of your worship, it seemes it is to saie, I acknowledge your worship for my lord, and my selfe for your vassall.
- G. And what is your opinion of this custome, which wee haue in England to shake handes one with another?
- A. Two handes fastened together, alwaies hath beene a token of friendship, but to shake and plucke them, as here they do one to another, I hold it for small gravitie, and I knowe not whether I may call it lightnes.
- G. Rather it seemeth that it is for the greater confirmation of friendship.
- A. This confirmation ought to bee with workes, and not with gestures; nor shaking of the handes, and so much the rather, because there are many which with hand in hand shake handes, and yet would kill each other.
- W. What say you of that custome of kissing between men and women and thus openly?
- A. This custome first began in Rome, in the time it most flourished, although it were inuented for a different purpose, then it is now vsed.
- W. For what purpose was it inuented?
- A. The Romanes did so much detest wine in women, that they had a law, in which they did condemne to death that woman which did drinke wine, and because they might not drinke it without being knowne; their kinsfolkes had leave to kisse the women, that they might knowe by their breath whether they had dronke wine or no.
- W. If nowe they should kill all those women which drinke wine, I see we should be quite without women.
- G. I beleuee that it were not any great losse, seeing they are cause of many evils vnto us.
- W. I holde that the greatest cause of dissolution in some women in England is this custome of kissing publicly, for that by this meanes they lose

la vergüenza y a el tocamiento del befo, les entra vn veneno que las ynficiona.

- A. Antes que se yntroduxesse ésta costumbre en Roma, cuenta Tito Livio, que desterraron de ella a vn senador, persona de mucha quenta, solo por que besó a su muger delante de vna hija suya.
- G. De vn citrino viniéron a dár en otro citrino.
- E. En España no se vñ besár los hombres a las mugeres?
- D. Si béñ los maridos a sus mugeres, y esto allá detrás de siete paredes, donde aun la luz no los pueda ver.
- G. Es por que los Españóles son demasiadamente celozos.
- A. No, sino, per que sómos tan trabieños, que no hémos menester esse apetito, para hazér mil malos recaudos que sería si tubiessemos esse Ocaçion.
- G. Yo créo, que antes causaría hastío, y no andarían los hombres, tan golósos, por que vedamiento es causa del apetito.
- A. No es fuego el de la concupiscencia, que se ahoga por echarle mucha materia, antes es como la ydropesia, que mientras mas el enfermo beue mas sed tiéne.
- D. Especialmente entre los Españóles que por ser de complexión coléricos, está Venus en su punto.
- G. Yo entiendo ésto al contrario, por que Venus consiste mas en vmedad que en calor, por lo qual entiendo que mas aptos son para semeiante exercicio los vmedos de complexión, que los coléricos que con de su naturaléza sécos.
- A. Si però la humidád sin calor, sería como la tierra sin el sol, que no es suficiente de misma a producir cosa alguna.
- D. Por éste, los poetas, casaron a Venus con Balcáo Dios pe el fuego.
- E. Mas Balcáo ni Venus sin Ceres y Baco
- A. Before this custome was brought into Rome, Titus Livius telleth that they banished out of the citie a senator, a person of great account, onely because he kissed his wife before one of his owne daughters.
- W. They fell from one extremitie into another.
- G. In Spaine do not men use to kisse women?
- I. Yes the husbands kisse their wives, but as if it were behinde seven walls, where the very light cannot see them.
- W. It is because the Spaniards are too jealous.
- A. No not so, but because we are so warren, that we neede nothing to helpe our appetite, to make a thousand ill matches which would fall out if we should haue this occasion.
- G. I do rather beleue, that it would cause satiety, and that men would not seeke it so greedily, because forbidding is cause of desire.
- A. The fire of concupiscence, is not such as is extinguished by casting on much matter, but like the dropie, that the more the sicke person drinketh the more thirst shall be hath.
- I. Especially among Spaniards, which are of a cholerick complexion, Venus is in her full force.
- G. I take that quite contrarie, because Venus consisteth more in moisture then in heat, whereby it seemes to me that the moist of complexion are more apt to such matters, then the cholerick which are by nature drie.
- A. Yea but moisture without heate, would be as the earth without the sunne, which is not sufficient of it selfe to bring forth any thing.
- I. For this cause the Poets married Venus with Vulcan God of fire.
- G. But neither Venus nor Vulcan, without Ceres

lose their shamefastnes, and at the very touch of the kisse, there ensteth into them a poison which doth infect them.

Baco no valen vn \*caco.

- G. Pues yo para mi tengo, que en las tierras mas frías, está mas reconcentrado el calor natural, y por ésto con mayor aptitud, en los que biven en las tales regiones.
- A. No es esse calor reconcentrado que está en el coraçon el que es causa de este fuego, sino el que está en la sangre y partes exteriores.
- G. Si però no me negaréis, que el calor de la sangre no proscede de el, de el hígado.
- A. Assi es verdad, però no obra éste efecto en su origen y fuente, si no quando se ha derramado por las venas, y como la virtud el parzida, es mas flaca que quando está vñda, si quando lo esta es acometido el calor de su contrario el frío, y ésto confuérça y vehemencia vénse y resfria de fuerte que no puede obrár ni hazér su efecto.
- D. Assi es, y la esperiència de ésto se vé en los cabrónes, que es animal luxuriosissimo, y en llevándolo le a tierras frías, o no puede bivar, o pierde mucho de su potencia.
- G. Los Faunos o semicápras, que los antiguos llamávan médios dioses cuentan los autores, y poetas, que éran en estrémo luxuriosos.
- E. Es verdad, que úvo o ay tales hombres en en mundo llamados faunos?
- A. En la vida de Sant Páblo primer hermitaño se cuenta, que en aquel desierto donde el hazia su penitencia, la hazia tambien santo Antonio, el qual como por revelacion supiese como estava allí cerca san Pablo, le fue avigitar y en el camino encontro con uno, el qual de la çinta para arriba, tenía forma perfecta de hombre, salvo que la cabeça tenía llena de cornes.
- W. But i for my part thinke, that in countries most cold, the naturall heate is more united in his center, and therefore is there greater desire in those that live in those countries.
- A. It is not that heate, which is seiled about the hart, which is the cause of this fire, but that which is in the blood and exterior parts.
- W. Yea but you will not denie, but that the heate of the blood doth procede from the heate of the liver.
- A. It is true, but it doth not worke this effect in the originall and fountaine, except when it hath spread it selfe by all the vaines, and as the vertue dispersed is more feeble then when it is united; so when it is so, the heate is set upon by his contrarie the colde, and this cold with force and vehemencie doth overcome and coole in such manner, that it cannot worke his effect.
- I. So it is, and the experience of this is seene in great hee-goats, which is a most luxurious beast, and in carrying him to cold countries, either he cannot live, or he loseth much of his naturall strength.
- W. The Faunes or halfe goates which the auncient writers called halfe gods, authors and poets tell that they were woonderfully luxurious.
- G. Is it true, that there were and are such men the world called Faunes?
- A. In the life of saint Paull the first Hermit, they say, that in that desert where he made his repentance, Saint Antonie likewise made his, who by revelation knowing he was neere Saint Paull, went to visit him, and in the way met with one, which from the girdle upward had the perfect forme of a man, except that he had his head full of little hornes, & from

Ceres and Bacchus are worth a \* Cáo, a fruit in the Indies or a small peece of money there.

cornequeros pequeños, y de medio para abajo era cabrón con muy largas vedijas, y pies de lo mismo.

E. Hablaba alguna cosa?

A. Si que el sancto le habló, y le preguntó quien era y el en un lenguaje muy bárvaro, pero tal que el sancto le pudo entender, le respondió, que era uno de los avitadores de aquel desierto, a quien la ciega gentilidad adoraba por dioses, pero que eran criaturas mortales, y dixo mas a el sancto, que fu grey y gente le enbiava a el por embaxador a rogarle a el Sancto, que roga se por todos a el comun Dios de todas las gentes, que bien sabían que avia baxado de el cielo y hecho se hombre por redimir a los hombres, y con esto se fue por aquel desierto, con tanta ligereza que en muy breve espacio, le perdió de vista el sancto.

D. Yo he leydo tambien, que a el emperador Constantino magno, le traxeron de estos desiertos, otro bibe, y lo estubo muchos dias, y despues de muerto salado, le traxeron por muchas partes de el mundo, para que todos le biessen.

G. Bolviendo a nuestra primera plática, que os parece de esta ciudad de Londres?

A. A mi me parece, en verano tienda, y en invierno contienda.

G. Como se entiende esto?

A. Digo que parece, en verano tienda, porque en aquel tiempo, todos los Señores, cavalleros, y hidalgos, se salen fuera de ella, y se van a sus aldeas a passar el verano, quedando en ella solos los oficiales con sus tiendas abiertas.

G. Y por que lo de mas?

A. En invierno son los terminos y, como acuden de todo el reyno a ella

*the middle downward he was a be-goate with very long shagge haire, and fete of the same.*

G. Spake he any thing?

A. *Yea for Saint Anthonte spake unto him, and asked him who he was, and he in a language verie barbarous, yet notwithstanding such a language that the holy man could understand, he answered him, that he was one of the inhabitants of that desert, whom the blinde Gentiles worshipped for Gods, but that they were mortall creatures, and saide moreover to the Saint, that his people & nation sent him to him for an ambassador to entreat the holy mā, that he should pray for all of them, to the common God of all nations, for wel they knew, that he was come down from heauen, and being made man to redeeme mankind, and herewithall he went thorow the desert with such swiftnes, that in short space the holy man lost the sight of him.*

I. *Also haue I read, that they brought to the Emperour Constantine the great, out of these deserts, another aline, & there he was many daies, and afterward being dead and salted, they carried him thorow many parts of the world, that all men might see him.*

W. *Turning to our first speech, what do you thinke of the citie of London?*

A. *It seemes to me in sommer a shop, and in winter a contention.*

W. *How is this to be understood?*

A. *I say it seemes in sommer a shop, for that in that time, all the noble men, knights, and gentlemen, do goe out of the citie, and they goe to countrey villages to passe ouer the sommer, onely artificers remaining in it, with their shops open.*

W. *And why the other?*

A. *In winter are the termes, and out of euerie place of the kingdom, they come*

ella a sus pleitos está, hecha toda contienda o pleito, pero vltra de esto es vna de las mejores ciudades de el mundo a lo que yo entiendo.

G. Que dezís de toda la tierra en general?

A. Que es fertilíssima y abundante, de todas las cosas que ella produce, espeçial de ganados, deven de fer los mas gruesos y mejores de el mundo.

G. Y tambien de semillas es muy fértil.

A. Ansi es verdad, pero como no puede aver cosa perfecta en este mundo, ya que en esto es abundante, le faltan otras cosas necesarias, a la vida vmana, que ella por la frialdad de su sitio, no puede producir, y anstiene necesidad, de comunicacion con otros reynos.

G. Que cosas son estas, que dezís que le faltan, que yo créo que no ay cosa en el mundo, que en ella no se halle.

A. Es así verdad, pero es comunicado de otros reynos, que bien véys vos, que en ella no se cria oro ni plata, no se coje vino, ni azúte, azúcar, seda, espeçiería, ni frutas de las regaladas, como son cidras, limones, limas, naranjas, granadas, almédras, y otros mil generos de ellas, muy necesarios para el regalo de las gentes, y como digo de estas pocas cosas, pudiéra dezir de otras muchas que déxo.

G. Si, pero tenemos otras, que sirven en lugar de estas cosas, y ansi no las echamos menos, como cerveza por vino, manteca por azúte, y otras semejantes.

A. Con todo esto, sería imposible poder passar este reyno sin comunicacion con otro, lo que no tiene España, que sola entre todas las provincias de el mundo, podría passar sin comunicacion con otra, por producir, dentro de si todas

*so it to their pleadings, and so it is made nothing but contention and wrangling in lawe, but besides this it is one of the best cities in the worlde as farre as I perceiue.*

W. *What say you of the whole land in general?*

A. *That it is most fruitfull, and abounding of all things, which it doth bring forth, especially flocks of sheepe, which are the greatest and best of the worlde.*

W. *And also of seedes it is very fertile.*

A. *It is very true, but as there cannot be any thing perfect in this worlde, so although in this it abounds, yet other necessarie things are wanting in it, which are required to humane life, which thorow the coldnes of the situation, it cannot bring forth, and so it hath neede of commerce with other nations.*

W. *What things are those which you saie, that are wanting in it, for I beleue that there is not anie thing in the world that in it is not found.*

A. *It is true, but it is brought from other countries, for well you see that in it, neither groweth gold nor silver, nor wine, oyle, sugar, silk, spice nor fruits of the finest sorte, as are citrons, ly-mons, oranges, pomegranats, almonds, & a thousand other kindes of them, verie necessarie for the dayntie feeding of men, & as I spake of these fewe things, I could say of many others which I leaue.*

W. *Yea but wee haue others, which serue in steed of these things, & so we want them not, as beere for wine, butter for oyle, & others the like.*

A. *Notwithstanding all this, it were impossible this kingdom could endure without commerce with others, which Spaine standeth in no neede of, for that alone among all the countries in the world might endure without communicating with any*



todas las cosas necesarias, a la vida humana.

G. Pues, bien os podré yo decir vna cosa, que España no produce.

A. Qual es?

G. Especiería, que al fin lo traeis de la yndia.

A. Tenéis razón, que ésta sola le falta a España, pero, como vos dixistes, tambien se cria en ella, con que se podria suplir ésta falta.

G. Que es?

A. En lugar de pimienta, se cria vna yerua que llamamos pimienta, cuya simiente es de tanta fuerza, y de el propio efecto que la pimienta, que viene de yndias, en lugar de clavos, usan muchos de losajos, y si no fuese por vn mal olorzillo que tienen, son mas sabrosos que éstos, de açafrán gran cantidad se coje en España, genxibre de pocos dias aca, se a comenzado a plantar en ella, y se da bien.

G. Aloménos no me negaréis, ser mas fértil tierra en general Inglaterra que España.

A. Digo que es verdad, y lo conço, pero tambien osie decir, que de ésta fertilidad, viene la floxedad en las carnes, y mantenimientos de ella, que son de poco nutrimento y sustancia, y ésta es la causa, de que los yngléses nos notáis a los Españoles por miserables en el comer, por que las carnes de España, como de tierra mas estéril, son de tanto nutrimento que si comiéste de ellas vn hombre tanto como en ynglaterra come, sin dúbda ninguna, reventaria.

D. Por ésto, ay uno manera de decir, comun en España, tu padre \*genó carnéro alsado, y acostó se, y murió se pues, no preguntes, de que murió.

A. En la propia España tenemos la iperéncia de ésto que la Andaluza que es tierra mas fértil que

\* A province in Spain.

any other countrey, bringing forth within it self all those necessarie things for mans life.

W. But well may I tell you one thing which Spaine affords not.

A. What is it?

W. Spice, which you fetch from the Indies.

A. You say true, for Spaine onely wants this, but as you haue said also, there growes in it that which may supply this want.

W. What is it?

A. In steede of pepper there growes an herbe which we call pepper herbe, whose seede is of such strength, and of the very same effect the pepper is which comes from the Indies. In steede of cloves, many use garlick, and if it were not for a little ill smell which it hath, they are more sauior then the other. Great quantitie of saffron is had in Spaine. Ginger not long since is begun to bee planted therein, and it prospereth well.

W. At least you will not denie me, England generally to be a more fertile countrey then Spaine.

A. I say it is true, and I doe graunt it, but also I cantell you that of this fertilitye proceedes the faintnesse of the flesh there, and the substance of it, which is of small nourishment and sustenance, and this is the cause why the English men doe marke the Spaniards for pinching in their diet, for that the flesh of Spaine as of a countrey more barren, is of such nourishment, that if a man should eat of it so much as in England they eat, without doubt he should burst.

I. For this cause there is a common saying in Spaine, thy father supped with mutton roasted, and went to bed and died, do not now aske whereof he died.

A. In Spain we haue the experience of this, that in Andeluzai which is a countrey more fertile then \* Estremadura

que Estremadura, las carnes de ella, no son con mucho de tanto nutrimento, ni tan buen favor, como estas otras.

E. Tambien se véé ésto en los yngléses, que van a España, que dicen que no pueden comer tanta carne allá, como comían acá.

G. Decíme a óra, que os parece, de el trato de nuestra gente?

A. Generalmente hablando, toda la gente yngléa, es benigna, y amorosa, afable, alegre, y amigos de regozijos, y fiestas, agénos de toda melancolia, como aquellos, en quien predomina el humor sanguino, pero fuera de ésto, he notado en todos en general tan ynfatigable avaricia, que desdora todas sus virtudes.

G. Y de las mugeres que dezís?

A. Las mugeres generalmente hablando, piénso que son las mas hermosas de el mundo, por que tienen todas tres grácias particulares, para ser lo, que son en estrémo bláncas, coloradas, y rúbias, y la que con éstas grácias que son generales a todas, acierta a tener buenas faiciones, es acabada en hermosura: pero tambien os digo con la misma generalidad, que tienen tres faltas.

G. Quales son por vida vuestra?

A. No las quisiéra decir, por no caer, en desgracia con ellas.

G. Yo fálgo por fiador que no cairéis.

A. \* Tenéis razón, que quien nunca subió, no puede caer, pero las tres faltas son, pequeños ojos, grandes bocas, no buena tez en los rostros, y de ésto es la causa el áyre tan frío y sutil, que corre en estas partes, que se les cúrte y por ésto es buena la ynbición la, de las mas carillas, aunque yo entiendo que no deve de bastar.

G. Vos lo acvéys disputado muy bien, y yo os quedo muy aficionado fervidor, y así os suplico, que el tiempo que estubiédes en esta tierra os sirváis de mi.

A. Yo

madura, the flesh is not by oddes of such nourishment nor of so good taste as that of Estremadura.

G. Also it may bee seene in Englishmen, which go into Spaine, which saie that they cannot eate so much flesh there, as they did eate heere.

W. Tell me now, what you thinke of the English manner?

A. Speaking generally, al the English people are courteous and louing, affable, and merrie, and lovers of sportes and feastes, free from all melancholie, as those in whome doth predominate the sanguine complexion: but besides this I haue noted in generall, such an insatiable covetousnes, as doth deface all their vertues.

W. And what say you of the women?

A. The women generally, I thinke they are the most faire of the world, for they haue all the three special graces which make the so, they are wonderfully white & red, & that with these graces which are general to all, there happeneth for them to haue such good fauour, whereby they are most beautifull: but also I tell you with the same generalitie, that they haue three faults.

W. I pray you what are they?

A. I would not willingly tell them least I fall into disgrace with them.

W. I will be your suretie you shall not.

A. You say true, he that neuer gat vp, can neuer fall, but the three wants are little eies, great mouthes, and not very smooth skinne in the face, and heereof the cause is for that the aire is so colde and subtil in these parts, which doth tan them, and therefore maskes were well inuented, although as I perceiue they helpe not.

W. You haue disputed very well, and I remaine your affectionate servant, and so I entreat you that the time you are in this countrey you so use me.

A. I

- A. Yo os doy muchas gracias, por el ofrecimiento, y quedo yo no menos a vuestro servicio, y por que se va haciendo tarde, nos vamos recojiendo alas posadas que ya es ora.
- G. Beio a vuestras mercedes las manos.
- D. Yo las de vuestras mercedes.

Diálogo séptimo, entre un fargento y un cavo de esquadra, y un Soldado, en el qual se trata de las cosas pertenecientes a la milicia, y de las calidades que deve tener un buen Soldado, con muchos dichos graciosos y buenas quen-  
tos.

- Sa. A Donde camina señor soldado?
- So. O señor Sargento házia la tabla, si v.m. no manda otra cosa.
- Sa. Lleva muchos dineros que jugar?
- So. Mi paga enterita como la recibí, que no he oído gastar vn real, por no quírar se lo a el juego.
- Sa. Esto es de buenos cofrades, antes falte para el cuerpo que para el juego.
- So. A que feria puedo yo yr, en que mas gane, pues aventuro con quatro ducados ganar quatro-cientos.
- Sa. Y si el dado dice mal, allá van rocin y manzanas.
- So. Señor o rico pijado, o muerto descalabrado.
- Sa. Esta es la cuenta de los perdidos.
- So. Cuerpo de tal señor, que hijos o muger tengo yo que mantencir?
- Sa. Si pero ne fuera mejor vestir se que jugar el dinero?
- So. Yo he hecho mi cuenta, y he menester camisas, jubón, layo, calzones, medias, y zapatos, y sonbrero, y en quatro ducados, no ay para todo, pues comprar vno nu-  
evo,

- A. I give you many thanks, for your offer, and I remaine no lesse at your service, and because it waxeth late, let vs betake our selves to our lodgings, for it is time.
- W. I kisse your hands.
- I. And I yours.

The seventh Dialogue betweene a Sergeant of a band, and a corporall, and a Souldier, in which are handled matters pertaining to warfare, and the parts that a good soldier ought to haue, with many fine sayings & good speeches.

- Sa. W Hither walke you soldier?
- So. O sergeant towards the dining place, if you command no other matter.
- Sa. Do you carry with you much money to play?
- So. My whole pay as I received it, for I durst not spende one fixe pence thereof, least I should take away so much from play.
- Sa. This is the part of good companions, let there be wanting for the body, rather then for play.
- So. To what faire may I goe, wherein I may gaine more, seeing I venture with fower duckates, to gaine fower hundred.
- Sa. If the die turne ill, there goes horse and apples.
- So. Sir, either hanged rich, or dead with head broken.
- Sa. This is the reckoning of cast awates.
- So. Bodie of me, what children or wife have I to keepe?
- Sa. Tea but were it not better to apparell your selfe, then to play away your money?
- So. I have reckoned with my selfe, I have neede of shirts, doublet, cassocke, breeches, stockings, shoes, & hat, and in fower ducats there is not for all this, for to buy one thing  
new

- évo, y traer lo otro viejo, no pareçe bien, quiero jugar, quizá ganare para comprar lo todo.
- Sa. Y si los pierde, quedar se ha sin lo vno y lo otro.
- So. Señor, preso por mil, preso por mil y quinientos, todo es estar preso, diré estonges desnudo naci, y desnudo me hallo y desnudo moriré.
- Sa. Digame, save quando entramos de guardia?
- So. Esta noche le toca a la compañía.
- Sa. Con que armas sirve con pica, o arcabuz?
- So. Con vn mosquete de siete palmos.
- Sa. Pues como dize, que no sacó mas que quatro ducados teniendo siete depaga.
- So. Vno me descontaron de pólvora y cuerda los contadores, otro le dado a mi camarada para la despenza de esta semana, y otro que se me quitó de los tococos.
- Sa. Justa está la cuenta.
- So. Es como la de el trillo, cada piedra en su agujero.
- Sa. Quantos son de camarada?
- So. Tres y con migo quatro.
- Sa. Tantos pies tiene vn gato.
- So. cinco con el rabo.
- Sa. Tienen buen aloxamiento?
- So. Tal sea la salud de el aposentador que nos le dió.
- Sa. Como no es bueno?
- So. Peor es vna cahurda de lechones.
- Sa. Tienen huésped de hermosa?
- So. Hermosa señor fargento, yo pienso que los diablos son serafines en su comparación.
- Sa. Bueno es el encarecimiento, que tal le tiene?
- So. Ella es mas vieja que Metusalen, mas arugada que vna páa, mas suzia que vna mosca, mas seca, que vn palo, diente y muela, como por la mano, la boca su-mida, como ojo de culo, los ojos el vno tuerto, y el otro que no se le facaran con vn garaváto finalmente, toda ella es vn retráto

- new and weare another old, seemes not well, I will play, peradventure I shall get so much to buy all new.
- Sa. If you loose, you must go without one and the other.
- So. Sir, arrested for a thousand, taken for a thousand fine hundred, all is but to be arrested, I will then saie I was borne naked, and naked I finde my selfe, and naked shall I die.
- Sa. Tell me, do you knowe when we watch?
- So. This night it falls to the companie.
- Sa. What armes serve you with, a pike or shot?
- So. With a musket of seaven handfuls.
- Sa. How then saide you, that you had but fower ducats, having seaven for your paie?
- So. One ducate defalked for powder and match, the other haue I given to my comrade for the charges of this weeke, and the other was taken out for lendings.
- Sa. The reckoning is very right.
- So. It is euen as a threshing floore, euerie stone in his bole.
- Sa. How many cabbin mates are you togither?
- So. Three, and with me fower.
- Sa. So many feete hath a cat.
- So. He hath five with the taile.
- Sa. Have all you good lodging?
- So. I would to God such were the health of the Furriel which gave it vs.
- Sa. How so, is it not good good?
- So. A pigstie is woorse.
- Sa. Have you a faire Hostesse?
- So. Faire master Sergeant, I thinke the diuels are Seraphines in respect of her.
- Sa. You give her good commendations, what handfomnes is in her?
- So. She is more olde then Methusalem, more wrinkled then a dried grape, or raisin, more filthy then a sie, more dree then a stick: teeth and choock, and sucketh eue-teeth as in ones hand, the mouth rie filthy wound sunke in as the bole of the taile, the eies one quite out, and the other so sunke into her head that it cannot be plucked out with a booke. In fine, all of  
her

\* A horse laden with apples passing a river was carried away, and so both lost.

\* Succors or lendings which they give souldiers when there is no paie and when the paie comes they take it off.

\* Which goeth dree then a stick: teeth and choock, and sucketh eue-teeth as in ones hand, the mouth rie filthy wound sunke in as the bole of the taile, the eies one quite out, and the other so sunke into her head that it cannot be plucked out with a booke. In fine, all of  
her



So. \* No sabe v.m. que está vna higa en Róma para el que da consejo a quien no se le pide.

Sa. No se enoje señor soldado que se hará viejo antes de tiempo.

So. \* No puede ya ser mas negro el cuervo que sus alas.

Sa. Señor cayo de esquadra, vaya digale a el atambór que toque a recojer la guardia.

Ca. Yo voy aguarde me aqui v.m.

So. Señor fargento dexeme yr a jugar vn ráto antes que se meta la guardia.

Sa. Tanto le pesa este dinero, que tal priesta tiene por echarlo de si.

So. Yo mas querria doblállo.

Sa. \* No sabe como dice vn refrán, si quieres tener dineros tenellos.

So. De que sirve tener pocos o Cesar onada.

Sa. Vaya con Dios, y pare lo a buen punto.

So. Dios me libre de vn azar.

Sa. \* Y ami de vellacos en quadrilla, y villanos en gavilla, de moça adivina, y de vieja latina, de todos a el caminar, y de larga enfermedad, de párrafo de legista, de ynfra de canonista, de eçetera de escrivano, y de rçcipe de médico, de razón de diz que però y sino, y de sentençia de conque.

Ca. Ya toca la caja a recojer.

Sa. Vamos entre tanto a buscar a el Sargento mayor, para que me de el nombre.

Ca. El estará en casa de el general.

Sa. Vamos allá, que todo es camino, es menester que esta noche aya muy buena guardia.

Ca. Por que ay alguna sospecha?

Sa. Ay nuévas de enemigos, y assi es necesario doblar las postas y reforçarlas, y poner dos otras centinelas

So. *Do you not know, that there is a floute for him in Rome, that giues counsell to him that requires it not at his hands.*

Sa. *Be not angrie master soldier, for it will make you old before your time.*

So. *\* The crow cannot be blacker then her feathers.*

Sa. *Corporall goe and tell the drum that he sound to set the watch.*

Co. *I goe, sarrie for me here.*

So. *Sergeant, let me go please at dice a little before the watch be set.*

Sa. *So troublesome is his money to him, that he hasteth to throwe it from him.*

So. *I woulde rather double it.*

Sa. *Do you not knowe what the prouerbe saith, if you will haue money keepe it.*

So. *What good will a little do one? either an Emperour or nothing.*

Sa. *Go in Gods name, and rest when you are well.*

So. *God keepe me from a bazard.*

Sa. *And me from knaues in my squadró, & clownes in shoock together from a maide that is a propheteesse; and an old woman a latinist; from durt in iourneies; and from long sickness; from the paragrasse of the lawyer; from the infra of the Canonist; from the et cetera of the Scrine-nour; from the recipe of the Philisition; from that reason that saith, He saith that, but, if not; and from the sentence of with which.*

Co. *Now sound the drum to set the watch.*

Sa. *In the meane while let vs go seeke the Sergeant maior, that he may giue me the worde.*

Co. *He will be at the generals house.*

Sa. *Let vs go thither, for it is all in our waie, it is needfull to night that there be a good guard.*

Co. *Why, is there any suspicion of anie thing?*

Sa. *There is newes of the enimie, and therefore needful to double the set men to watch, & to make them strong, and*

centinelas perdidas y que la ronda y contra ronda visiten amenudo.

Ca. Pida v.m. a el fargento mayor, que nos den leña harta, para que aya buena lumbre en el cuerpo de guardia.

Sa. Ansisera, y todas las armas estarán \* muy apunto que hombre aperçevido, medio combatido.

Ca. Menester será dar a los soldados pólvora, cuérda, y balas.

Sa. Todo se les dará y orden a los cofelletes que no les falte picça.

Ca. Qual es la mejor arma de las que vñamos en la guerra?

Sa. La pica es la reyna de las armas.

Ca. Poco valdrian las picas, sino se guarden bien con la arcabuzeria, que daña a el enemigo desde a fuera.

Sa. Menos valdria la arcabuzeria, si despues de dada la carga, no tuviere adonde repararse de la cavalleria enemiga, y de todos los demás que le procuraren dañar.

Ca. Si, però bien vemos que mayor daño se le haze a el enemigo con la arcabuzeria, y mosqueteria, que con las picas.

Sa. Todo esse daño es poco en comparación de el que se recibe a el desbarate de vn esquadron o exercito, el qual se seguiria luego con la cavalleria, si las picas que es vna muralla fuerte, no se pusiesen ala defenfa.

Ca. Por esso compáran a vn esquadron bien formado, a el cuerpo vnmano donde los braços, y piernas, que son los que obran son los arcabuzeros y las picas que están siempre firmes, y es de dó viene virtud, a todas las partes de el esquadron, el cuerpo y coraçón.

Sa. Assi es, y aun si mirais la forma de vn esquadron de los ordinarios formado, con sus mangas, hallareis en el, la misma forma de el cuerpo vnmano.

Ca. Que partes se requiere que tenga vn buen soldado.

Sa. Muchas

*and to put two or three \* lost centinels, and that the round & counterround may go very thicke. \* Those that lie close vnder the enimie to heare that they saie and do.*

Co. *Require of the Sergeant maior, that hee giue vs woode enough, that there be a good fire vpon the body of the garde.*

Sa. *So it shall be, and all the armes to be very readie, for a man well warned halfe armed.*

Co. *It will be needfull to giue to the soldiers powder, match, bullets.*

Sa. *All shall be giuen them, and order for the corslets that they want no piece.*

Co. *Which is the best weapon, of those wee use in warre?*

Sa. *The pike is the queene of weapons.*

Co. *Of little auaile were pikes, if they were not lined with shot, which hurteth the enimie a farre off.*

Sa. *Of lesse auaile were the shot, after they had discharged, if they had no place to defend themselves from the enimies horsemen, & all the rest which should endeuor to offend them.*

Co. *Yea, but we well see, that greater damage is made to the enimie, by small shot and musket, then with pikes.*

S. *All this damage is little in comparison of that is receiued at the ouerthrow of a squadron or armie, the which would followe straight with the horse, if the pikes, which is a strong wall, did not put themselves in defence thereof.*

C. *Hereby they compare a squadron well in order, to a mans bodie, where the armes and legs which are those that worke, as the shot and the pikes which stande alwaies firme, and from whence proceede force to all the parts of the squadron, to the bodie and hart.*

S. *So it is, and also if you marke well the fashion of a squadron of the ordinarie squadrons made with his wings, you shall finde in it the very fashion of a mans bodie.*

C. *What parts are required in a good soldier?*

S. Many

\* It cannot be worse then it is, or nothing can exceede the highest degree.

\* i. Multitudes together.

Sa. Muchas, y muchos escrivieron de esta materia, pero las mas necesarias y ordinarias, yo las diré. El soldado, quanto a lo primero, deve ser muy honroso, porque soldado sin honra seria de ningun provecho, pues ella es la escuela que le ha de hazer obrarlo, que no báltan premios, ni ruegos, ni amenazas de sus oficiales.

Ca. Por esto, deve el soldado traer, siempre escripta en la frente aquella coplilla que dize, por la honra pon la vida, y pon las dos, honra y vida por tu Dios.

S. Lo segundo deve ser el soldado valiente no temeroso ni covarde.

C. El soldado couarde mas propiamente se podría llamar cipaytajo, al qual quando los paxaros le pierden una vez el miedo, le asientan encima de el, o como el Rey de las ranas.

S. Como es esto de el Rey de las ranas?

C. Dizen, que en tiempo de maricaña, las ranas desleáron tener Rey como todas las demas naciones, y pidieron a Jupiter que era Rey de los dióces que les dió esse Rey el qual viendo su necesidad quito burlar de ellas, y dixo les que para un dia señalado les daria Rey, ellas le esperávan con grande alegría, y venido aquel dia, salieron todas, de sus casas, muy compuestas, como convenia para recibir a su rey y pusieronle en la superficie de el agua esperando; en este tiempo Jupiter arrojó desde el cielo, vn gran madéro, que dió con el, en la laguna donde, ellas estávā, tan grā golpe, y hizo tan gran ruido que ellas fueron todas turbadas, y asombradas, y unas por aqui, y otras por alli, cada una huyó a su casa, sin osar llegar, a hazer a su rey el devido acatamiento, ni salir fuera en muchos dias quedó se el madéro nadando encima de el agua, y ellas con tanto temor

S. *Many, and many have written of this matter, but the most necessarie & ordinarie I will tell you. The soldier touching the first point, ought to be honorable, for a soldier without honor would profit little, because it is the spur which drives him on to effect that, which rewards are not sufficient to doe, nor intreaties, nor threatnings of his officers.*

C. *Therefore the soldier should carrie alwaies written in his forehead this verse, which saith, For thy honor hazard thy life, and hazard them both, honor and life for thy God.*

Sa. *The second, the soldier ought to be valiant, and not fearful nor coward.*

Co. *A cowardly soldier may better be called, a thing made to feare away crows, that when the birdes doe once cast off their feare of the same, they sit on the top of it, or as the king of frogs.*

Sa. *How is that of the king of frogs?*

Co. *They say, in olde time, when beastes could speake, the frogs desired to haue a king, as other nations had, and they requested Jupiter, which was king of the Gods, that he would giue them a king, which seeing their simplicitie, would needs mock them a little, and told them that by a day appointed, he would giue them a king: they waited for it, with great ioy, and the day being come, all of them came forth out of their houses, well attired, as was fit for the receiuing of a king, and put themselves upon the upper part of the water waiting: then Jupiter casteth downe from heauen a great blocke, which lighted in the lake where they were: it gaue such a blow, and made such a noise, that they were all troubled, & amazed; some this way, others that way, every one ranne home to his house without daring to come nere, to make their due reverence to their king, nor to come forth a doores in many daies. The beame remained*

mór de vér cosa tan grande, que ninguna osáva salir fuera de su casa, y alli morian de hambre, hasta que poco apoco fue saliendo la mas esforcada, y siguiendo la las demas, cada dia yvan perdiendo mas el temor, y se yvan llegando cerca de su rey, viendo le a el tan manso y que no se movía, ni les dezía mala palabra, al fin tanto continuáron y (como la mucha conversación es causa de menosprecio) se llegaron a su rey y viendo todas lo que era, saltáron encima de el, y començáron a cheriary dar grandes risadas, haziendo burla de su Rey, y de su temor passado bolviéron pues, a ynfiltrar a Jupiter que en todo cátoles dióse Rey no tan manso, sino que fuéle justiciéro, Jupiter viendo su neçia porfia les ymbió por Rey a la çigueña, la qual rýna hasta oy entre ellas, çebando se y comiendolas cada dia en pena de su loca petición, pues pudiendo bivir libres quisieron mas hazer se esclávas y mas vn Rey cruel, que manso y benigno.

Sa. No ha estado malo el quento, y mejor es la moralidad.

Ca. Dexémos esto aora, y prosiga v.m. adelante con su plática de el buen soldado.

Sa. Lo tercero que ha de tener ha de ser gran sufridor de travájos, y para esto deve ser de rezia complexion.

Ca. Ya el que esto no tuviere, el diablo le truxo a la guerra, como dizen de el moço vergonzoso, que el diablo le trájó a palácio.

Sa. Deve tambien ser muy obediente a sus oficiales, y que haga de buena gana y sin mostrár mal rostro lo que le ordenáren siendo de el servicio de la Réyna.

Ca. Quiten le a la milicia la obediencia

*ned there swimming upon the water, & they with such feare, to see a thing so great, that none of them durst once go out of his doores, & therein they died with hunger, untill that by little and little, the most hardiest of them went out, and the rest following, every day they went more & more, loosing their feare, & they went neuer to their king seeing him so gentle, and that he mooned not, nor said neuer an ill worde to them, in the end they continued so long, and (as much familiaritie oftentimes breeds contempt) they approached to their king, & seeing all of them what he was, they leaped upon him, & they began to crook & to break out into great laughers, making a iest of their king, and of their own passed feare: they returned afterward to importune Jupiter, that by al means he would giue them a king, but not so still and quiet, but that he should be a iusticer; Jupiter seeing their foolish importunitie, sent the Stork to them for a king, the which raigneth til this day among the, fasting himselfe, and eating them up every day, as a punishment for their fonde request, when they might have lined at libertie they would make themselves slaues, and rather set up a cruell king then a benigne and gentle.*

Sa. The tale hath beene ill, yet better is the morall thereof.

Co. Let vs leaue this, and goe forward with your speech of the good souldier.

Sa. The bird that he is to haue, is to be a great endurer of travels, and for this he should be of a strong complexion.

Co. And he that hath not this, the Diuell brought him to the warre, as it is said he brought the blusfaced yong man to the court.

Sa. He ought also to be very obedient to his officers, and that he performe that obedience with a good will, & without shewing an ill countenance so that they shall ordaine, being for the Queenes service.

Co. Let them take away obedience in soldiers

gia en los soldados, y bolver se ha en confusión Babilónica.

- Sa. Otras muchas particularidades, ha de tener el buen soldado, que yo no quiero tratar aora, quien las qui siere ver, léa quatro o cinco tratádos que andan de ello en lengua Española vno de el capitán Martin de Egulúz y otro de Escalante otro de don Fernando de Cordua, y otro de don Bernardino de Mendoza, que alli lo verá bien pintado.
- Ca. A qui buelve nuestro mosquetero muy cabizbávo viene, perdido deve de aver.
- Sa. A señor soldado vna palabra.
- So. Dexe me v.m. señor Sarjento, baltta me mi mala ventura.
- Sa. Que ha sido, perdióse toda el armada?
- So. No topára yo aqui aora con el veláco que este juego ynvéntó.
- Sa. Que le quería dezir?
- So. Reniego del diablo, sino le avía de hazer mas tajádas que púntos se han echádo en los dados des pues que el los ynvéntó.
- Sa. \* Esto me parece echár la culpa de el año a la aluárda quien le mandó a v.m. jugar.
- So. El Diablo que no duerme, y anda tras hazérme deséperar para llevárme.
- Sa. Pues mire no le crea, sino quando venga, diga le que por aora no puede yr, que citá ocupado en fervio de sumagestad, que se buelva otro día, y si no quisiere deshagale la horquilla en la cabéca.
- So. Muy bueno va esto, estóy yo rabiándoy e sta se v.m. burlando de mi.
- Sa. Mire, yo le daré un buen remedio como dos onças de jaráve de paçiencia, y quatro de unguento de oluido y beualo todo, y con ello purgará essa malenconia y quedará luego buéno.
- So. Serán dos purgas una tras otra despues

diers in war, and it will turne to a Babiloncall confusion.

- Sa. The good soldier is to have many other particulars, which I will not now handle, who soever will see them, let him reade fower or five treatises, which handle it in the Spanish toong, one of capitaine Martin Eguluz, another of Escalante, another of Don Fernando de Cordua, and another of Don Bernardino Mendoza, there may it be seen well set out.
- Co. Here comes backe againe our muskettier, he comes hanging downe his head, it is likely he hath lost.
- Sa. Ho Soldier a word with you.
- So. Let me alone Sergeant, it is enough that I have ill lucke.
- Sa. What hath happened, is all the fleet lost?
- So. I would not meete now with that wilaine that inuented this play.
- Sa. What would you say to him?
- So. I renounce the deuill if I woulde not giue him more slashes then hath set prickes on dice, since he inuented them.
- Sa. This seemes to me, to put the fault of the asse on the packesaddle. Who commanded you to play?
- So. The diuill which sleepe not, and folloves after mee to drine me into despaire, that he might carrie me away.
- Sa. Then marke what I say, do not beleue him, but when he cometh tell him, that for this time you cannot goe, that you are imployed in her Majesties seruice, that he come another day, and if he will not, clip your musket staffe on his pate.
- So. This goes well, I stand raging, and you mocking.
- Sa. Behold, I will giue you a good remedie, Take two ounces of the sirrups of patience, and fower ounces of the oile of forgetfulness, and drinke it off, and wish this you shall purge this melancholy, and forthwith you shall be well.
- So. That will be two purges one after another.

pues de purgada la bolsa purgár el cuerpo.

- Sa. Pues nunca ha oydo dezir, que un clavo sáca otro, y una mano lava otra y entrambas la cara.
- Ca. Pues como se dió tan presto fin ala triste tragédia.
- So. Yo les diré a vuestras merçedes como fue, el me dió a parár a onze, paré le quatro reales, echóme un enquentro, y tirómelos.
- Sa. Mal principio.
- So. Antes suelen dezir, que es buen pronóstico perdré la primer a mano.
- Ca. No ay regla tan general que no tenga excepción.
- So. Díome a parár luego a doze, que es mi fuerte, paréle ocho reales, echo un azár, díxe repárollos, o torgó me el repáro, lançó el dádo, y echó otro azár.
- Sa. Pues pecador, para que queriades mas de aver ganádo con quarenta otros quarenta, que mercadér ay que gane a çiento por çiento.
- So. Señor, yo no me contenté sino quise arrancár las clavos de la mesa como dízen, y díxe siete y llevar, dixo me, digole, Relança y echa su fuerte, y arrebuja cō todo \* ami dexóme del agalla, sin blanca como el diablo se aparecio a san Benito.
- Ca. \* Siempre lo verá, que quien todo lo quiere todo lo pierde.
- So. \* Mas siempre despues de ydo el conçejo viene el conçejo.
- Sa. \* Aora bien quien erra y se enmiénda a Dios se encomienda.
- So. La enmiénda será empeniár el capotillo, para bolverme a esquivar si puedo.
- Sa. Essa no será enmiénda sino obstinación.
- So. \* Aqui perdí vna agúja, aqui la tengo de hallár.
- Sa. No veis pecador que se os cayó en la mar essa agúja, como la queris hallár?

So. Yo

other, after the purse is purged to purge the bodie.

- Sa. Have you neuer heard, that one nail drieth out another, one hand washeth another, and both of them the face.
- Co. But how made you such a quicke ende of the sad tragedie?
- So. I will tell you how it was, he chanced me a eleven, I set him two shillings, he cast and drew them.
- Sa. An ill beginning.
- So. Rather they are wont to say, it is a good signe to loose the first hand.
- Co. There is no rule so general which hath not some exception.
- So. He chanced me forthwith twelue which is my chance, I set him fower shillings, he cast a hazard, I said I set againe, he allows of it, he throwes the dice, & casts another hazard.
- Sa. Why wretched sinner, what would you more then to gaine with fortie other fortie, what marchant is there which doth gaine a hundred for a hundred?
- So. I was not content but would pull in peeces the nailes of the table as they say, and I saide I set seven times so much as he drew, he said content, I saie content. He throwes againe the dice, & he drew up al, and so he left me \* hanging on the gill, with out a farthing, as the diuill appeared to Saint Benit.
- Co. You shall alwaies see, he that all conueth, all looeth.
- So. But after the steede stolen, shut the stable doore.
- Sa. Now he that erres and amends, to God him selfe commends.
- So. The mends will be to pawne the cassock, to go againe to quie my selfe if I can.
- Sa. This will not be an amends but obstinacie.
- So. Heere lost I a needle, and heere hope I to finde it againe.
- Sa. Do you not see, that this needle fell into the sea, how will you now finde it?

So. I

- So. Yo me tengo de yr a vna hechizera,  
que me de vna soga de ahorcá-  
do, que dizen que es buena pa-  
ra hazer ganar.
- Ca. ✱ Castiga me mi madre y yo tróm-  
pose las.
- Sa. A ora señor vamos por aóra a me-  
ter la guardia, que despues se  
tratara de esso.
- Ca. Vaya a llamar sus camaradas.
- So. Yo voy, befo a vuestras merçedes  
las manos.
- Ca. Yo tambien quiero yr por mis ar-  
mas.
- Sa. Yo me voy a la vandera, alli espe-  
raré.
- So. *I am to go to a witch that she may giue  
me a rope of a hanged man, which  
they say is good to make one winne.*
- Co. *My mother doth chastice me, and I  
mocke and mewe at it.*
- Sa. *Now sir, let vs go euennow to set the  
watch, for afterwards we will talke  
heereof.*
- Co. *Go and call your Cameradoes.*
- So. *I go, I take my leave of you.*
- Co. *I will also go for my armes.*
- Sa. *I goe to the colours, there will I tar-  
rie.*

F I N I S.

